The Genesis Genealogies

God's Administration in the History of Redemption

Rev. Abraham Park, D.Min., D.D.

"Remember the days of old, Consider the years of all generations.
Ask your father, and he will inform you, Your elders, and they will tell you."
Deuteronomy 32:7

God's Administration in the History of Redemption, **Book 1**

US$24.95

A basic part of understanding one's ancestors is knowing when they were born, how long they lived, and what they have accomplished in their lives. Here, in *The Genesis Genealogies*, lies that crucial information about the forefathers of Christianity.

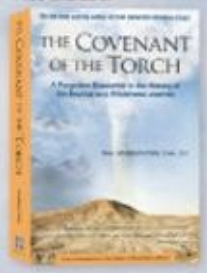
Rev. Abraham Park has meticulously analyzed the genealogies in the book of Genesis. Taking the precise date references in Genesis and calculating the years, he builds a complete chronological timeline and exposition of the first twenty generations in the Bible, from Adam to Abraham. This book allows readers to see the comprehensive course of God's redemptive work through the genealogies in Genesis, which eventually leads to the coming of the Messiah.

Rev. Park shares his biblical scholarship to help us more fully comprehend the layers of meaning that the text offers us:

- A timeline chart containing never-before-published information.
- The meanings of the forefathers' names within the context of their culture, language and times.
- New, enlightening discoveries about how the faith was passed down through the generations.
- Commentaries by a range of biblical scholars that clarify what *The Genesis Genealogies* reveals about God's administration of redemption.

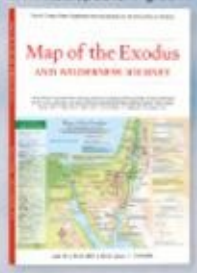
This book is for every Christian. It will bring you into a closer relationship with God as you see how His divine plan for redemption and salvation unfurled throughout history, transforming the lives of early biblical figures, and ultimately, yours and mine today.

Also available:



ISBN: 978-0-7946-0631-2

To order wall map:
www.tuttlepublishing.com



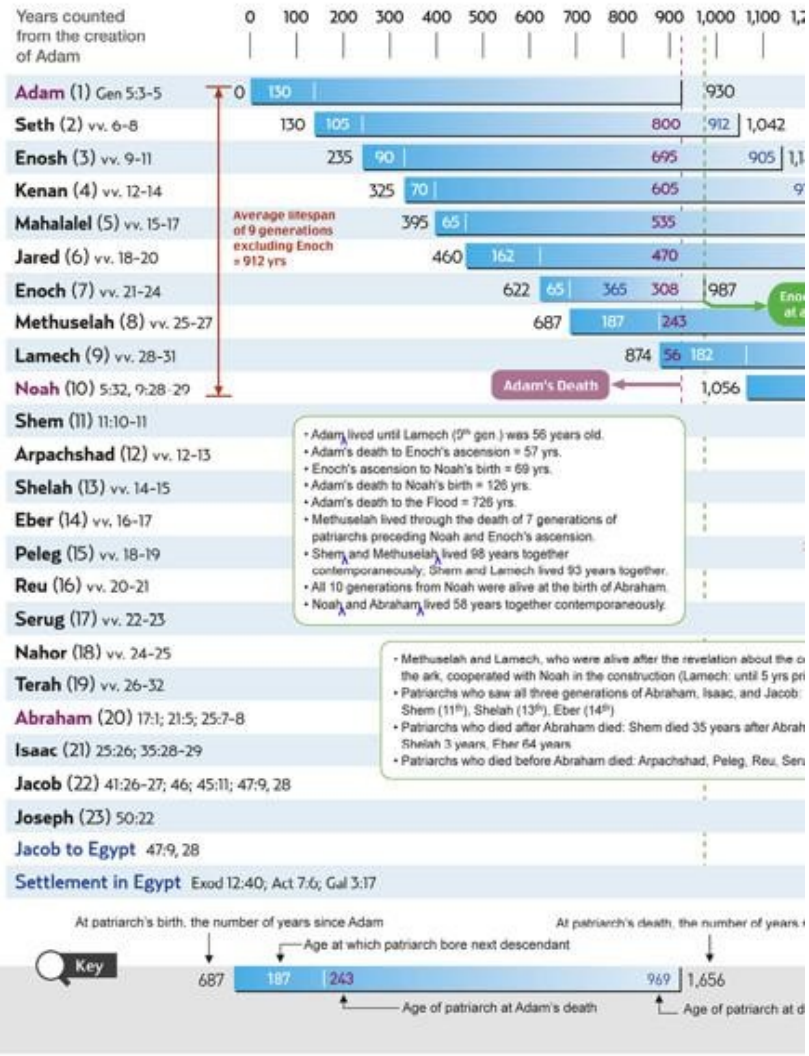
ISBN: 978-0-7946-0644-2

www.thehistoryofredemption.com

Excursus 1

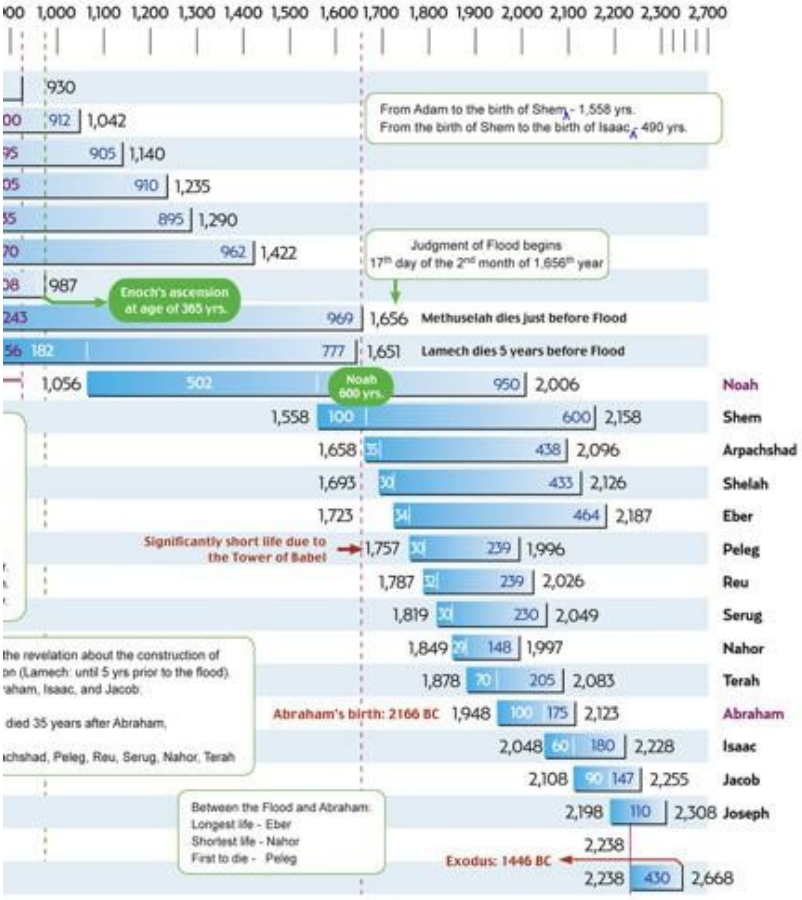
Chronology of the Patriarchs

(✙ Organized and illustrated for the first time in history)



"Now it came about in the four hundred and eightieth year after the sons of Israel came out of the land of Egypt, in the fourth year of Solomon's reign over Israel, in the month of Ziv which is the second month, that he began to build the house of the LORD" (1 Kings 6:1).

* Solomon became king in 970 BC and began building the temple in 966 BC.
* The year of the exodus = 1446 BC (966 + 480)



* The years are based only on biblical accounts and estimations may vary slightly.

The Genesis Genealogies

THE GENESIS GENEALOGIES

God's Administration in the History of Redemption

Rev. Abraham Park, D. Min., D. D.

PERIPLUS EDITIONS
Singapore • Hong Kong • Indonesia

Unless otherwise indicated, scriptural verses quoted in this book are taken from the *New American Standard Bible*, © The Lockman Foundation 1960, 1962, 1963, 1968, 1971, 1972, 1973 and 1975.

Published by Periplus Editions (HK) Ltd.

www.periplus.com

Copyright © 2009 Periplus Editions (HK) Ltd.
First Korean edition published by Huisun in 2007. www.pyungkang.com

All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced or utilized in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording, or by any information storage and retrieval system, without prior written permission from the publisher.

Library of Congress Control Number: 2009926227
ISBN 978-1-4629-0206-4

Distributed by:

North America, Latin America & Europe
Tuttle Publishing
364 Innovation Drive
North Clarendon,
VT 05759-9436 U.S.A.
Tel: 1 (802) 773-8930
Fax: 1 (802) 773-6993
info@tuttlepublishing.com
www.tuttlepublishing.com

Japan
Tuttle Publishing
Yaekari Building, 3rd Floor,
5-4-12 Osaki, Shinagawa-ku,
Tokyo 141-0032
Tel: 81 (3) 5437 0171
Fax: 81 (3) 5437 0755
sales@tuttle.co.jp
www.tuttle.co.jp

Asia Pacific
Berkeley Books Pte. Ltd.
61 Tai Seng Avenue #02-12
Singapore 534167
Tel: (65) 6280-1330
Fax (65) 6280-6290
inquiries@periplus.com.sg
www.periplus.com

Indonesia
PT Java Books Indonesia
Jl. Rawa Gelam IV No. 9
Kawasan Industri Pulogadung
Jakarta 13930
Tel: (62) 21 4682-1088
Fax: (62) 21 461-0206
cs@javabooks.co.id

Printed in Singapore

14 13 12 11
10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 1105TP

Contents

Foreword by Dr. Frank James . 9
Introduction . 11

Part One
Consider the Years of All Generations . 15

Chapter 1 The First Command: Remember the Days of Old . 18
1. The "Days of Old" in Light of God's History of Salvation . 18
2. Remember . 19

Chapter 2 The Second Command: Consider the Years of All Generations . 22
1. Years of All Generations . 22
2. Consider . 23

Chapter 3 The Third Command: Ask Your Father, and He Will Inform You, Your Elders, and They Will Tell You . 24
1. Your Father and Elders . 24
2. Ask . 25
3. He Will Inform You and They Will Tell You . 26
4. The Unchanging Word of God . 26

Part Two
God's Administration of Redemption and the Genesis Genealogies . 29

Chapter 4 God's Administration of Redemption . 32
1. The History of Redemption as a Part of God's Administration . 32
2. The Focus and Scope of Redemptive History . 33
3. Christ, the Apex of Redemptive History . 35

Chapter 5 God's Work in the History of Redemption and the Genealogies . 38
1. The Redemptive-historical Significance of the Genealogies . 38
2. The Structure and Flow of the Genealogies . 39

Chapter 6 The Genealogies in Genesis . 42
1. The Structure of Genesis . 42
2. Ten Genealogies in Genesis . 43
3. Sepher Toledoth (Book of the Generations) . 45
4. The Method of Studying the Genesis Genealogies . 46

Chapter 7 Years of the Generations in Genesis . 50
1. Perspective on the Inerrancy of the Bible . 50
2. Years of the Generations in Genesis 5 and Genesis 11 . 51
3. A Point of Reference for Calculating the Years . 53

Part Three
The Genealogy According to the Line of Cain . 57

Chapter 8 The Descendants of Cain . 59
1. Cain: gotten one, received . 59
2. Enoch: dedication, initiated, teacher . 66
3. Irad: runner, fleet, boastful . 68
4. Mehujael: blotted out by God . 70
5. Methushael: man of Sheol or man of God . 71
6. Lamech: a strong youth, the conqueror . 72

Chapter 9 The Descendants of Sin in the Line of Cain . 78
1. The Descendants of Nimrod and the Construction of the Tower of Babel . 78
2. Ishmael and Esau . 82

Part Four
The Genealogy According to the Line of Seth . 87

Excursus 2:
The Twenty Generations of the Patriarchs . 89

Chapter 10 The Genealogy from Adam to Noah . 93
1. First Generation: Adam . 95
2. Second Generation: Seth . 99
3. Third Generation: Enosh . 102
4. Fourth Generation: Kenan . 105
5. Fifth Generation: Mahalalel . 107
6. Sixth Generation: Jared . 110
7. Seventh Generation: Enoch . 113
8. Eighth Generation: Methuselah . 120
9. Ninth Generation: Lamech . 123
10. Tenth Generation: Noah . 127

Excursus 3:
The Duration of the Ark Construction . 135

Excursus 4:
The Meaning of the 120 Years in Genesis 6:3 . 138

Chapter 11 The Genealogy from Shem to Abraham . 142
11. Eleventh Generation: Shem . 143
12. Twelfth Generation: Arpachshad . 147
13. Thirteenth Generation: Shelah . 152

Excursus 5:
Perspective on Cainan . 154
14. Fourteenth Generation: Eber . 156
15. Fifteenth Generation: Peleg . 160
16. Sixteenth Generation: Reu . 163
17. Seventeenth Generation: Serug . 166
18. Eighteenth Generation: Nahor . 169
19. Nineteenth Generation: Terah . 173
20. Twentieth Generation: Abraham . 176

Part Five
A New Work of Salvation . 181

Chapter 12 The Differences between the Line of Cain and the Line of Seth . 183
1. The Genealogies of Cain and Seth Have Different Beginnings . 183
2. The Genealogies of Cain and Seth Demonstrate Different Lifestyles . 185
3. The Genealogies of Cain and Seth Have Different Records of Birth and Death . 186
4. The Genealogies of Cain and Seth Have Different Records of Longevity . 188

Chapter 13 The Work of Separation . 193
1. The Work of Separation among the Patriarchs after Noah . 193
2. The Work of Separation in Abraham's Life . 202

Chapter 14 Abraham from the Redemptive Historical Perspective . 208
1. The Work of Sin Proliferated until the Birth of Abraham . 209
2. God Preserved Faith throughout the History of Sin and Wickedness . 210
3. The Beginning of a New Work of Salvation through Abraham . 210

Conclusion . 215
Commentaries . 221
1. Dr. Kyung-Bae Min, Th.D. . 222
Distinguished Professor of Baekseok University Honorary Professor of Yonsei University

2. Dr. Nam-Sik Kim, Th.D. · 227
Chief Editor of Kidok (Christian) Times, Visiting Professor of Chongshin University, Director of the Counseling Mission Research Center of Korea, President of the Presbyterian Church Korea History Association
3. Dr. Young-Bae Cha, Th.D. · 230
Former President of the Chongshin University
4. Dr. Youngyup Cho, Ph.D. · 232
Professor of the Kyeyak Graduate School of Theology
5. Rev. Tae-Deuk Lim · 233
Senior Pastor of Dae Myung Church in Daegu
Former Moderator of the Hap-dong General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church in Korea
6. Dr. Andrew J. Tesia, Ph.D. · 235
President of the Research Institute of Reformed Theology
7. Dr. Horiuchi Akira · 241
Representative Pastor of Grace Missions, Evangelical Free Church of Japan, Chairman of the Food for the Hungry International (F. H. I.), Chief Director of King's Garden in Mie

Bibliography · 242
Notes · 247
Index · 249
Excursus 1: The Chronology of the Patriarchs · Endpapers*

Foreword

All too often genealogies are viewed as uninteresting or, even worse, boring. However, Dr. Abraham Park's new book, *The Genesis Genealogies: God's Administration in the History of Redemption*, demonstrates the great value and even excitement of an in-depth study of biblical genealogies. A strong foundation is necessary for any enduring structure. And so it is also true that the book of Genesis is a firm foundation for our biblical faith. Genesis is not only the groundwork for understanding our beginnings, but is also the basis for understanding ourselves as well as our relationship with God and one another. One simply cannot overstate the importance of Genesis as the foundational paradigm for all Christian thinking. Dr. Abraham Park is to be congratulated for his important and worthy contribution to our understanding of this foundational book.

Dr. Park displays a remarkable facility with the Hebrew language. Time and again, his linguistic skills are on display. This indicates not only the seriousness of his research, but also his love for the book of Genesis. He has rightly understood that one cannot fully grasp God's work of salvation unless one digs deeply into the book of beginnings. The old adage that one cannot understand the future without first understanding the past holds true in biblical studies. Dr. Park takes this adage to heart in this remarkable book.

The biblical point of departure for Dr. Park is Deuteronomy 32:7, where the Song of Moses declares, "Remember the days of old, consider the years of all generations . . . ." He carefully considers the ten genealogies of Genesis (of heaven and earth, of Adam, of Noah, of Noah's sons, of Shem, of Terah and Abraham, of Ishmael, of Isaac, of Esau, and of Jacob), and through each of these the history of redemption is clearly expounded. Dr. Park employs these genealogies, which find their ultimate expression in the work of Jesus Christ, to reveal the core of God's work of redemption in history.

There are several distinguishing features of Dr. Park's important book. First, it is a book suffused with Scripture. It is absolutely clear that Dr. Park loves the Bible, and it is obvious that he drinks deeply from the fountain of biblical study. Second, it has a clear evangelistic thrust. At many points the clear implication of his exposition is a warm invitation to embrace Jesus as Lord and Savior. Dr. Park, it would seem, has never lost sight of the Great Commission in Matthew 28:19–20. Third, I was delighted to see that he takes the historicity of the Genesis account seriously. In a day when many modern theologians cast doubt on the historicity of Adam, for example, it is refreshing to see a firm affirmation of historicity. Finally, the text is clear and well written. The average reader will not get lost in technical jargon, but will indeed see the teaching of Scripture with ease.

This book is a sweeping vista of God's plan of redemption from Genesis down through the ages to its final expression in the person and work of Jesus Christ. Dr. Park's book is a journey worth taking. I heartily recommend this insightful work of Dr. Park for seminaries and colleges. I can assure readers that this book will not disappoint. Read it, study it, pray over it, and then put its wisdom to work in your life and ministry.



Dr. Frank A. James III, Ph.D., D.Phil.
President and Professor of Historical Theology
Reformed Theological Seminary, OrlandoIntroduction

Introduction

In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth.

—Genesis 1:1

The Book of Genesis is called "The Book of the Beginning" because it is a record of the origin of the universe, the origin of man, the origin of the fall, and the commencement of God's work of salvation. At the same time, Genesis is also the introduction to the entire Bible and the blueprint of the history of redemption (Isa 46:10; 48:3).

The study of the basic foundation of Genesis, the genealogy of the generations (תּוֹלְדוֹת, *tôlēdôth*), holds profound soteriological (salvational) value. The genealogies in Genesis are not merely enumerations of years, but contain God's amazing plan for salvation which permeates throughout the entire Bible. In-depth study and research into the lives and ideologies of the patriarchs, as well as accounts of significant events, will greatly help us understand God's administration of redemptive history.

I took special interest in the years of generations recorded in the Genesis genealogies, and I focused on the Scripture verses, "Remember the days of old, consider the years of all generations" (Deut 32:7) and "Stand by the ways and see and ask for the ancient paths, where the good way is, and walk in it" (Jer 6:16). In order to understand the true meaning of the genealogies, I researched for a long period of time, carefully read through the Bible, and referred to various books and resources.

I was able to discover the living and active faith of the patriarchs in the Genesis genealogies. Each and every step they took in faith left a clear imprint. They lived in eager anticipation for the woman's seed (Gen 3:15) and the sound of their charged heartbeats still reverberates today. Tears overwhelmed me and sleep escaped me as I was moved by the grace that led me to understand the hidden meaning of the years of generations.

Grace abounded even more abundantly as I shared my newfound understanding with the beloved members of Pyung Kang Che-il Church during weekly services and special gatherings. I testified of the grace I received from my studies in 1968 for the first time and then in 1983 through six months of Bible studies at the Wonji-Dong Retreat Center. Since then, I have modified and added to the studies and shared them on different occasions both in the country and abroad throughout the year 2005. The study blessed both me and the congregation through the overflowing inspiration of the Holy Spirit.

I had delayed publishing this book because I did not feel that it was necessary for a person like me to publish a book. However, in response to my fellow ministers and beloved congregation's strong urging that I publish my work in the year 2007, the fiftieth "Jubilee" year anniversary of this servant's ministry, I organized some of my studies into an expository format. Though this book may be inadequate as fruit presented before God, I took the courage to share it with the world because of the enormous grace that the congregation and I had received. I earnestly hope that God's grace may allow this book to cause even larger waves of blessings to sweep across the churches throughout the world.

This book is certainly not a theological or scholarly treatise. I merely organized what I preached through the enlightenment of the Holy Spirit after repeatedly kneeling in prayer and reading the Bible through and through. I was greatly blessed by the writings of the forerunners of faith as I referred to them in my research for this book. I borrow the words of the author of Ecclesiastes and confess, "That which has been is that which will be, and that which has been done is that which will be done. So, there is nothing new under the sun" (Eccl 1:9).

The content of this book can hardly be considered complete in explaining the infinite Word of God,

which is a mystery that cannot be understood entirely even through a lifetime of research and study. I would like to ask the readers to read this book with a Christlike heart of understanding; please forgive any awkward sentences and generously tolerate any unintended mistakes.

When Peter asked, “Lord, how often shall my brother sin against me and I forgive him?” Jesus answered, “I do not say to y ou, up to seven times, but up to seventy times seven” (Matt 18:21–22). I ask that you overlook my shortcomings with the love and mercy of Christ. If anything has been accomplished through this inadequate servant, I confess that it was not the work of this eighty-year-old sinner, but completely the work of the Lord.

Just as King David confessed, “My times are in Your hand” (Ps 31:15), the life I have lived and the history of the Pyung Kang Che-il Church are wholly in God’s sovereign hand of grace. Truly, the mighty strength of God and the power of the Holy Spirit have been present. As I advance beyond the fiftieth year of my ministry, which had been made possible only by the grace of God, I feel immensely grateful for the opportunity to leave a trace of this insignificant life in the form of this meaningful book.

Finally, I take this opportunity to express my gratitude to my fellow ministers, elders, leaders, and the congregation of Pyung Kang Che-il Church, as well as my wife and children for all of their prayers and support for this inadequate servant. In addition, I would like to thank every helping hand that has made the publication of this book possible.

I pray that Jesus Christ, the only Savior, who died on the cross for all of our sins and rose again on the third day, will always be with His churches around the world. Furthermore, I yearn for the day when the sinful land and all of its people are filled with the knowledge of the Lord as the waters cover the sea (Isa 11:9; Hab 2:14; Matt 28:19–20). I lift up all the glory to our only living God. Hallelujah!

October 27, 2007
From the prayer room of Pyung Kang Che-il Retreat Center
Servant of Jesus Christ,



Abraham Park


לדעת לכל בר דעת דרך המסעות ארבעים שנה במדבר והרוחב והאורך של אלון הקדושה מנהר מצ
עמלק
מדבר צין הוא קדש
ים המלח
עתר
עיר כרמל
שבט
מדבר סיני
מדבר פארן
מדבר שור
ארץ פלשתים
באר שבע
שמעון
שבט
ארץ ב ושן
פתם
שרה
צען
אלכסנדרי
מצרים
לוח המסעות במדבר
אשר על פי ה' יסעו ועל פי ה' יחנו
א׳ רעמסס
ב׳ סכת
ג׳ אתם
ד׳ פיהחירת
ה׳ מרה
ו׳ אילם
ז׳ ים סוף
ח׳ מדבר סין
ט׳ דפקה
יו׳ אלוש
יא׳ רפידים
יב׳ מדבר סיני
יג׳ קברת התאוה
יד׳ חצרת
טו׳ רתמה
טז׳ רמן פרץ
יז׳ לבנה
יח׳ רסה
יט׳ קהלתה
ך׳ הרספר
ךא׳ תרדה
ךב׳ מקהלה
ךג׳ תחת
ךד׳ תרח
ךה׳ מתקה
ךו׳ חשמנה
ךז׳ מסרות
ךח׳ בני יעקן
ךט׳ חרהגדגד
ל׳ יטבתה
לא׳ עברנה
לב׳ עציון גבר
לג׳ מדבר צין
לד׳ הרהדר
לה׳ צלמנה
לו׳ פונן
לז׳ אבת
לח׳ דיבן גד
לט׳ עלמן דבלי״
מ׳ הרי עברים
מא׳ ערבת מואב

PART ONE

Consider the Years of All Generations

"Remember the days of old,
Consider the years of all generations.
Ask your father, and he will inform you,
Your elders, and they will tell you."
—Deuteronomy 32:7

The Book of Deuteronomy is composed of Moses' three farewell sermons which he gave after the completion of the 40-year wilderness journey and immediately preceding his death. Indeed, these final words and exhortations to the Israelites exhibited Moses' resolute determination at the end of his remarkable 120-year life. A suitable title for his first sermon would be "The Recollection of God's Past Work of Salvation" (Deut 1:1–4:43); for the second sermon, "The Reiteration of the Law" (Deut 4:44–26:19); and for the third, "The Future Foretold" (Deut 27–30). The book concludes with Moses' death and the commissioning of Joshua as Israel's new leader (Deut 31–34).

Moses gave the sermons near the end of the long wilderness journey, on the first day of the eleventh month in the fortieth year of the exodus. Hence, it was two months and ten days before the great entry into Canaan (Deut 1:3–5). The main audience was the second generation that was born in the wilderness since all the first generation soldiers had died before crossing the brook Zered (Deut 2:13–15). Moses preached with an earnest hope that this second generation in the wilderness would continue to keep their faith and obey the Word of God as they live in Canaan.

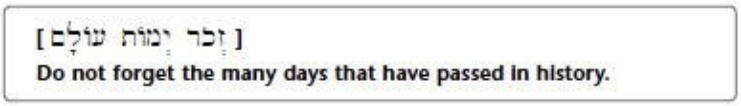
Moses' song in Deuteronomy 32 addresses the somber subject of Israel's betrayal, their fall, and God's subsequent judgment. The fundamental message of this song, however, is God's boundless love and mercy for His chosen people. Calling the Israelites by the affectionate name, "Jeshurun"***1*** (Deut 32:15), Moses desired to ingrain in their hearts the truth about the God who had chosen them from before the beginning of time. He is sovereign over all history, He is the source of all blessings, and He governs their future.

In Deuteronomy 32:7, Moses expressed his concern for the dismal events that could unfold after the Israelites enter and settle in the land of Canaan. He warned them forcefully so that they might prevent such events from taking place. Furthermore, he gave them three specific commands: "Remember the days of old," "Consider the years of all generations," and "Ask your father." This surely is a demonstration of God's fervent love for His chosen people. In drawing their attention to the walk of faith during the "days of old" and the "years of all generations," Moses hoped that the Israelites, who would soon possess the land of Canaan, would also continue to walk in faith.

Moses declared that God had chosen the Israelites as His heirs even before creation (Deut 32:8-9; Eph 1:4–5) and that the land of Canaan had been prepared as an inheritance for His people (Deut 32:49). Thus, they were to adhere strictly to the three commands in order to fully inherit this land. Today, these three commands are the basic code of conduct for Christians who are journeying toward the kingdom of heaven, the spiritual Canaan.

CHAPTER 1

The First Command: Remember the Days of Old



1. The "Days of Old" in Light of God's History of Salvation

The Hebrew term for the *days of old* is יְמוֹת עוֹלָם (*yĕmôt ʿôlām*). It does not simply refer to past history, but rather to a history marked by the fulfillment of God's Word and His promise to save mankind (Deut 4:32; Ps 77:5–6, 11–12; 78:1–8; 143:5; Isa 46:9). The term "days of old" encompasses a quite comprehensive period of time, dating all the way back to the beginning, and includes the entire time in which God's work of salvation has been in progress. This is evident from the two Hebrew words that compose the expression, "days of old": יְמוֹת (*yĕmôt*), the plural form of יוֹם (*yôm*), meaning "day"; and עוֹלָם (*ʿôlām*), meaning "long duration," "antiquity," "eternity," or "everlasting."

For Moses, the "days of old" encompass the following events:

1. The fall of Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden
2. Cain's gruesome murder and the unrighteous deeds of his descendants
3. The overflowing sin and wickedness of Noah's time
4. The construction of the Tower of Babel and man's hubris
5. The covenant of the torch given to Abraham in Genesis 15
6. Israel's 430 years of slavery in Egypt
7. The glorious exodus from Egypt
8. The 40 years of trial in the wilderness

God's commitment to the work of salvation has been steadfast until today despite man's increasing sins after the fall and expulsion from the Garden of Eden. Thus, the "days of old" are the days and years of God's work marked by His fervent love and tears. The prophet Jeremiah referred to these days as the "ancient paths" and the "good way" (Jer 6:16).

The "good way" is the path of faith through which the messianic promise was fulfilled. It is a path of suffering that requires people of faith to engage in ongoing battles against evil in order to sustain the good and to overcome any affliction that may come along the way (Heb 11:36). Thankfully, this path promises the blessing of peace in the end (Jer 6:16b). This entire path is compressed into the genealogies in the Book of Genesis. In other words, the traces of the events of old, the good way, God's fervent love, and His tears and zeal have been condensed into the genealogies.

2. Remember

In Hebrew, the term *to remember* is זָכַר (*zākar*). This word means "to remember," "to recall a memory" (Exod 13:3), "to consider" (Job 7:7), "to recollect" (Ps 63:6), "to think in light of the future" (Isa 47:7), and "to remind." In the original Hebrew text, this word *zākar* appears 15 times in the Book of Deuteronomy (Deut 5:15; 7:18 [2 times]; 8:2, 18; 9:7, 27; 15:15; 16:3, 12; 24:9, 18, 22; 25:17; 32:7). Human beings have the tendency to forget even crucial events after some time has passed or as generations change. The chief cupbearer whose dream Joseph interpreted is an excellent example (Gen

40:23).

The history of the Israelites is, undeniably, full of events that are too shameful to recall. They spent 430 years of slavery in a foreign country (Exod 12:40–41) and wandered in the wilderness for 40 years without having their own land. The 430 years in Egypt were so bitter that the Bible often likens Egypt to an iron furnace (Deut 4:20; 1 Kgs 8:51; Jer 11:4). Through Moses and the other prophets who were sent to the Israelites throughout the ages, God urged the Israelites to remember their detestable years of slavery in Egypt (Exod 13:3, 14; 20:2; Deut 5:6, 15; 6:12; 7:8; 8:14; 13:5, 10; 15:15; 16:12; 24:18; 24:22; Josh 24:17; Judg 6:8; Jer 34:13; Mic 6:4). Moreover, He commanded them to remember how He had allowed them to suffer in the wilderness (Deut 8:2; 9:7). Nations that easily forget their times of suffering are doomed to experience greater suffering in the future.

God did not arbitrarily instruct the Israelites to "remember" without helping them to do so. God established various memorial days so that the "days of old" would be eternally remembered. He also designated various objects as memorials for His people. The noun form of the verb *to remember* (*zākar*) is זִכָּרוֹן (*zikkārôn*), meaning "memorial" or "reminder."

First, God instituted memorial days to commemorate great historical events. He instituted the Day of Passover and commanded His people to "celebrate it as a permanent ordinance" (Exod 12:14, 17, 24). Accordingly, the Israelites observed Passover by eating unleavened bread and bitter herbs to commemorate God's saving work before the exodus when the angel of death passed over their homes and spared their lives (Exod 12:8; Num 9:11).

> Exodus 13:16 So it shall serve as a sign on your hand, and as phylacteries on your forehead, for with a powerful hand the Lord brought us out of Egypt.

Besides the Day of Passover, God also commanded the Israelites to observe the Feast of Weeks and the Feast of Tabernacles as reminders of the enormous and wondrous grace of salvation that He had poured upon them throughout their history (Exod 34:22–23; Deut 16:16). Furthermore, God commanded them to keep His Sabbaths holy: "You shall surely observe My sabbaths; for this is a sign between Me and you throughout your generations" (Exod 31:13). He also said, "And also I gave them My sabbaths to be a sign between Me and them" (Ezek 20:12, 20).

Second, after He began to intercede in human history, God urged the people to preserve certain objects as memorials. He did this so that they might remember God's grace, which He had poured out upon them in times of their distress, and give thanks to Him.

The following are some examples of the memorials that appear in the Bible. When 250 leaders of the congregation, along with Korah and his companions, assembled together against Moses and Aaron (Num 16:1–3), the earth opened up its mouth and swallowed them up with their households and all the men who belonged to Korah (Num 16:31–35). Then, Moses was instructed by God to tell Eleazar, "The censers of these men who sinned against their own souls, let them be made into hammered plates as a covering for the altar ... and they shall be a sign to the children of Israel" (Num 16:36–40).

When the Israelites challenged the authority of Moses and Aaron, God caused Aaron's rod to bud in order to stop their murmurings. He instructed Moses to place this rod in the Ark of the Covenant to be kept as a sign against the rebels (Num 17:10). God also commanded them to preserve manna—the food with which God had sustained the Israelites in the wilderness—in a jar to be kept in the Ark of the Covenant for their descendants (Exod 16:32–34). Finally, He commanded that the two tablets of the Law be kept in the Ark of the Covenant also (Deut 10:2, 5). Consequently, Aaron's budded rod, the jar of manna, and the two covenantal tablets were preserved in the Ark of the Covenant as memorials to remind the people of God's grace throughout the generations (Heb 9:4).

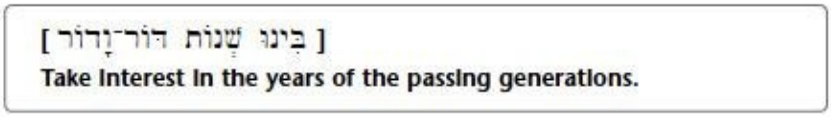
The bronze serpent that Moses made and erected on a pole during the wanderings in the wilderness

was also preserved as a memorial (Num 21:4–9; 2 Kgs 18:4). When the Israelites were about to die after being bitten by fiery serpents because of their grumblings against God, He commanded them to look at the serpent made of bronze so that they might be healed and live again. This bronze serpent was a foreshadowing of Jesus Christ, who would be nailed to the cross for all eyes to behold (John 3:14–15). At the same time, it was a reminder that God is merciful even in wrath.

Also, when God allowed Joshua to lead the people across the Jordan River after the death of Moses, He commanded them to set up a memorial to commemorate the miracle of the parting of the waters and the drying up of the land (Josh 3). God had them set up 12 stones in two different places as a perpetual sign for the crossing of the Jordan River (Josh 4:6). God commanded them to take one set of 12 stones from the middle of the Jordan and set them up in Gilgal (Josh 4:8, 20), and the other in the middle of the Jordan at the place where the priests had stood with the Ark of the Covenant (Josh 4:9). In Joshua 4:7, God said, "So these stones shall become a memorial to the sons of Israel forever."

The command to "remember the days of old" is a call to discover God's fervent love as well as His grace and guidance throughout the times of suffering, affliction, and trials so that we may come to deeply fathom His amazing plan of redemption.

The Second Command: Consider the Years of All Generations



Moses' second command was to "consider the years of all generations." It is easy to render the significance of this command as being similar to the first command, "remember the days of old," but there is a distinct difference.

1. Years of All Generations

The "years of all generations" and the "days of old" are similar in that both refer to the past, but the term "years of all generations" refers to a more defined and specific point in history than does the term "days of old." In Hebrew, the term *years* is שְׁנוֹת (*šĕnôt*), the plural form of שָׁנָה (*šānâ*). The term "days of old" refers to a general time in the past, whereas the term "years" refers to a significant and meaningful point in time within the "days of old." The word "generations" is composed of two consecutive occurrences of the Hebrew word דּוֹר (*dôr*), which means "time period" or "generation," and thus refers to each of the generations that appear within the history of salvation. Therefore, if the "days of old" refer to God's entire history of salvation, then the "years of all generations" refer to the specific administration of redemption which God performed in each generation within the history of salvation.

The genealogy is the most condensed form of presenting God's administration of redemption in each generation. Thus, studying God's work of redemption revealed through the genealogies with the inspiration of the Holy Spirit will lead us to a clearer understanding of God's amazing providence of salvation hidden within each generation.

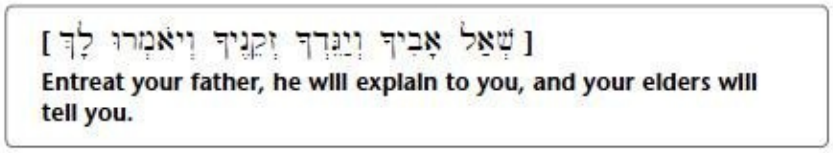
2. Consider

The word consider in the phrase "consider the years of all generations" is בִּין (*bîn*) in Hebrew and means "to discern" or "to have insight." It refers to the act of closely observing or studying the principle of a matter or event in order to gain thorough understanding and insight. Thus, the command to "consider the years of all generations" does not simply mean to reminisce about the past, but it is an exhortation to gain understanding through careful research and study. The prophet Isaiah also repeatedly urged the Israelites to "consider" in the following passage:

> Isaiah 51:1–2 Listen to me, you who pursue saving justice, you who seek Yahweh. Consider the rock from which you were hewn, the quarry from which you were dug. [2]Consider Abraham your father and Sarah who gave you birth. When I called him he was the only one but I blessed him and made him numerous. (New Jerusalem Bible)

This passage is a call to consider the events and experiences of different persons in the years of all generations. Isaiah urged the people to consider the faith of their ancestors, Abraham and Sarah, and also the history of Israel. He encouraged them not to lose hope even though their return from captivity in Babylon might have appeared impossible in the near future. Moreover, he beseeched them to reflect upon God's covenant with Abraham and to think about all of His great works during their years of slavery in Egypt.

The Third Command: Ask Your Father, and He Will Inform You, Your Elders, and They Will Tell You



Moses' third command was "Ask your father, and he will inform you, your elders, and they will tell you."

1. Your Father and Elders

The Israelites were to go and ask their fathers and elders. The Hebrew word for father is אָב (*'āb*) and refers to the male parent, but it also generally means "forefather." In the context of this verse, "father" refers to the patriarchs of all previous generations. The Hebrew word for elder is זָקֵן (*zāqēn*) and means "elder," "aged," "senior," or "old man." Elders in Israel were not merely old men or aged persons; they were leaders of the people. God commanded Moses to call the elders of Israel together and to consult with them about the plans for the exodus (Exod 3:16, 18).

Thus, the "father" and "elders" in this verse are the patriarchs of faith (e.g., Abraham) and the leaders of the people. They kept God's commands and never strayed outside the boundaries of God's Word and His law. Through oral narratives passed down by their ancestors, they were profoundly experienced and well trained in God's work.

It is crucial to note that most patriarchs enjoyed astonishing longevity. While there are certain things in life that can be learned relatively quickly, other things can be learned only through experience over an extensive period of time. Thus, the godly patriarchs must have come to understand numerous spiritual truths during their long lives. For them, the Word of God was not just knowledge; it was living wisdom deeply rooted into their lives. Leviticus 19:32 states, "You shall rise up before the grayheaded and honor the aged, and you shall revere your God; I am the Lord." Proverbs 16:31 also states, "A gray head is a crown of glory; it is found in the way of righteousness."

God granted spiritual leadership to the patriarchs, who lived godly lives throughout their long years, and charged the people to go to them and ask. Just as a nation turns to the seniors of society in times of crisis, God commanded His people to seek the advice of their fathers and elders without hesitation if their faith were ever to waver when adjusting themselves to the new society and culture in Canaan.

2. Ask

The word *ask* is שָׁאַל (*šā'al*) in Hebrew and means "to inquire," "to make a request," or "to beg" and has the connotation of a "desperate plea." The phrase suggests that the Israelites should proactively seek after their ancestors, ask questions, and plead for answers, just as a starving beggar cries out for food. God was commanding the sons of Israel to take special care and be diligent to learn about all the great works that He had accomplished for them.

In the past, the Israelites and their kings either went to God directly or to His prophets for help when faced with difficult problems (1 Kgs 22:7; 2 Kgs 3:11; 22:13; 2 Chr 18:6). In 1 Kgs 22:7, King Jehoshaphat cried out in the midst of battle, "Is there not yet a prophet of the Lord here that we may inquire of him?" King David also looked to God countless times and in every moment of his life (1 Sam

23:2; 30:8; 2 Sam 5:19, 23; 1 Chr 14:10). God Himself answered each time that David sincerely inquired of Him. As a result, David tasted the glory of victory in all his battles. On the contrary, because Joshua did not seek God's counsel, he made the grave mistake of agreeing to a peace covenant with the inhabitants of Gibeon who had come to him in disguise (Josh 9:14–15).

3. He Will Inform You and They Will Tell You

God assured the Israelites that when they ask their fathers and elders, that they will certainly provide an answer. He confirmed this in Deuteronomy 32:7: "Ask your father, and he will inform you, your elders, and they will tell you." The fathers will diligently answer those who inquire of them, and the elders will explain in elaborate detail. The Hebrew verb for inform is נָגַד (*nāgad*) and is derived from the word that means "to place an object on a high place for all to see." The word *nāgad* is used when God reveals His will to the people. This word is used when God reveals His will in a dream (Gen 41:25), and when the prophets proclaim the Word of God that they have received (Deut 4:13).

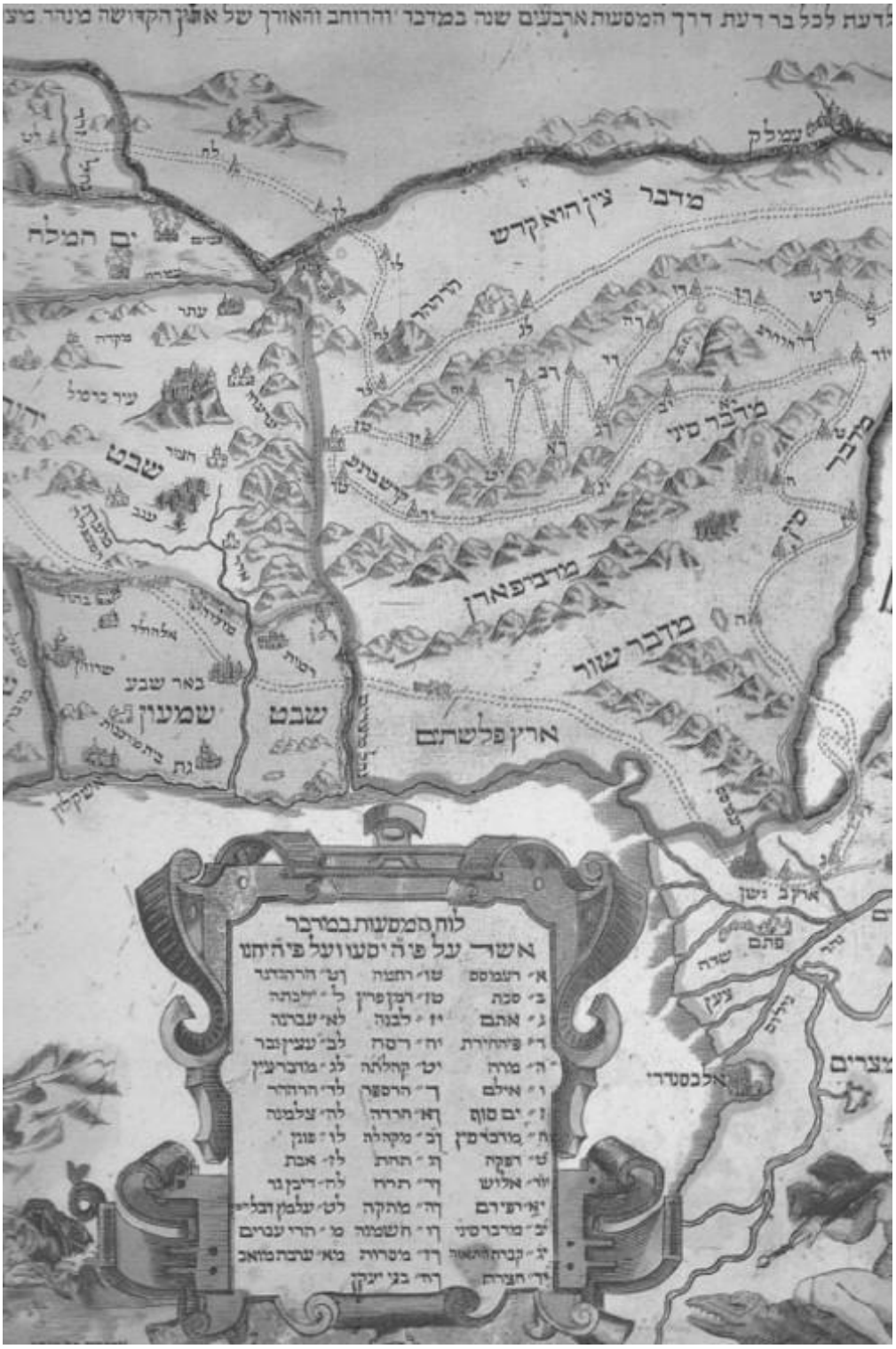
The Hebrew word for tell is אָמַר (*ʾāmar*), meaning "to speak," "to prove," or "to answer." This means that the leaders will not only tell, but will also explain the matter clearly when the people inquire. The people were to go to the fathers of faith, like Abraham, for issues concerning faith, and to their leaders with administrative duties or elders for issues concerning their communal or social lives.

With the passage of time, these "fathers and elders" have faded into history. However, they are still alive, providing answers for their inquiring descendants. We must ask the numerous patriarchs of faith that appear in the Bible and learn about the divine administration of redemption that is hidden within their generations. Then, armed with these insights, we must go on to live out our lives by fulfilling God's will in our generation.

4. The Unchanging Word of God

Everything in this world changes constantly, making it almost meaningless to try to distinguish the old from the new. However, the living Word of God is eternally unchanging; it is the same yesterday, today, and forever (Heb 1:12; 13:8). It does not corrupt or rust away for it is living, active, and sharper than any two-edged sword (Heb 4:12). God's Word is a new history in itself. Evil, defects, and profane[2] works emerge in history when we lose the Word of God or have it taken away from us (Deut 32:5).

As believers looking forward to the spiritual Canaan, our land of eternal Sabbath (the kingdom of God, heaven), we must open our ears to Moses' earnest cry to the Israelites before their entry into Canaan and receive it as a message for us today. As we continue to study and delve into the genealogies and contemplate the "days of old" and the "years of all generations," we will discover, through the help of the Holy Spirit, the great treasures hidden in God's plan of salvation. However, the discovery must not be merely for ourselves; we must pass it on to the godly descendants who will remain on this earth until the day of the Lord's return. This is God's purpose for us on this earth. It is part of His sovereign plan to preserve the covenantal offspring until the end of the world (Gen 45:7). I am sure that those who understand God's will and follow in the footsteps of the godly forefathers mentioned in the days of old and the years of all generations will enter into the Sabbath rest that remains for His people (Heb 4:1–11).


לדעת לכל בר דעת דרך המסעות ארבעים שנה במדבר והרוחב והאורך של ארץ הקדושה מנהר מצ
ים המלח
מדבר צין הוא קדש
עמלק
שבט
מדבר סיני
מדבר שור
ארץ פלשתים
באר שבע
שמעון
שבט
לוח המסעות במדבר
אשר על פי ה׳ יסעו ועל פי ה׳ יחנו
א׳ רעמסס
ב׳ סכת
ג׳ אתם
ד׳ פי החירת
ה׳ מרה
ו׳ אילם
ז׳ ים סוף
ח׳ מדבר סין
ט׳ דפקה
יו׳ אלוש
יא׳ רפידים
יב׳ מדבר סיני
יג׳ קברת התאוה
יד׳ חצרת
טו׳ רתמה
טז׳ רמן פרץ
יז׳ לבנה
יח׳ רסה
יט׳ קהלתה
ך׳ הרספר
ךא׳ תרדה
ךב׳ מקהלת
ךג׳ תחת
ךד׳ תרח
ךה׳ מתקה
ךו׳ חשמנה
ךז׳ מסרות
ךח׳ בני יעקן
ךט׳ הר הגדגד
ל׳ יטבתה
לא׳ עברנה
לב׳ עצין גבר
לג׳ מדבר צין
לד׳ הרהדר
לה׳ צלמנה
לו׳ פונן
לז׳ אבת
לח׳ דיבן גד
לט׳ עלמון דבלתי
מ׳ הרי עברים
מא׳ ערבת מואב
ארץ ב׳ נשן
פתם
שדה
צען
אלכסנדרי
מצרים

PART TWO

God’s Administration of Redemption and the Genesis Genealogies

The Bible is not merely a historical account of the Israelites; it is a magnificent record that contains the grand theme of God's work of redemption, starting with the account of creation (Gen 1–2) and concluding with the completion of the new heaven and the new earth (Rev 21–22).

The word *redemption* has a similar meaning to the word *liberation* and also refers to salvation, which is freedom from the bondage of sin obtained through a ransom payment. Therefore, redemption entails a ransom payment for our sins since the wages of sin is death (Rom 6:23). Jesus is the only one in heaven and on earth who has given up His own life as a ransom to redeem us from death (Matt 20:28). In 1 Timothy 2:6, Jesus is described as the one "who gave Himself as a ransom for all." Matthew 20:28 states that Jesus came "to give His life a ransom for many." Ephesians 1:7 states, "In Him we have redemption through His blood, the forgiveness of our trespasses." And 1 Peter 1:18–19 further explains, "knowing that you were not redeemed with perishable things like silver or gold from your futile way of life inherited from your forefathers, but with precious blood, as of a lamb unblemished and spotless, the blood of Christ."

God transferred all of the sins of mankind onto Jesus, who was without sin (Heb 4:14–15), and imparted His righteousness as a gift to those who believe in Jesus (Rom 4:25; 8:3–4; 2 Cor 5:21; Eph 2:8; Col 1:20–22; 1 Pet 3:18). God paid the ransom for our lives by sending His Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, so that His Son may give up His life in order to fulfill the "requirement of the Law" (Rom 8:3–4). Colossians 1:21–22 states, "And although you were formerly alienated and hostile in mind, engaged in evil deeds, yet He has now reconciled you in His fleshly body through death [v. 20: the blood of His cross], in order to present you before God as holy, blameless and beyond reproach."

Thus, the "history of redemption" refers to the entire course of history in which God saves sinners through the death and resurrection of Jesus Christ. A broader definition of the "history of redemption" is God's administration to renew mankind and all creation, thereby recovering the paradise that was lost through the fall of Adam and Eve (Rev 21:5).

The history of this world is founded upon the history of God's work of salvation because God is the origin of all history and sovereign over its development and changes (1 Chr 29:11–12; Job 12:23; Ps 103:19; Dan 4:25; Eph 1:11). The history of God's redemptive work is not separate from the history of this world; God works with, through, and upon the foundations of secular history. Therefore, a careful study of the Bible will give us deeper insight into the truth regarding the past, the present, and the future of this world.

Although we believe in God and have become His children, we easily overlook His greatness. We do not understand the enormity of His heart or the intricateness of His plan. It is my prayer that by studying of God's administration for salvation from the very beginning in detail, we will gain the insight to discover His greatness and praise His works. Moreover, I pray that each one of us may come to realize where we stand in terms of the progression in God's redemptive history as well as our respective duties and calling.

CHAPTER 4

God's Administration of Redemption

1. The History of Redemption as a Part of God's Administration

The history of mankind is the history of redemption, which unfolds according to God's administration. It is the history that God the Father devised after the fall, which Jesus the Son fulfilled, and the Holy Spirit completed.

(1) What is God's administration?

The word administration is οἰκονομία (*oikonomia*) in Greek and is used three times in the letter to the Ephesians (Eph 1:9–10; 3:2, 9). It also can be translated as "stewardship" (1 Cor 9:17), "divine administration" (Col 1:25), or "the mystery of His will" (Eph 1:9–10). Also used similarly is the word οἰκονόμος (*oikonomos*), translated as "manager" (Luke 16:2–4; Gal 4:2). Just as a steward manages and administers a house, the Lord of the universe governs the heavens and the earth for the purpose of saving His chosen people through Jesus Christ and His church according to the divine administration. God's administration includes the entire process of managing, allocating, arranging, planning, governing, and ministering the order, movement, and time of all things in the universe (Col 1:25). It is focused solely on achieving complete salvation for mankind, and the realization of this administration is entirely intertwined with Christ and His church (Eph 1:20-23).

Let us now briefly sum up the relationship between "administration" and "history of redemption." God's administration entails all of His providence and acts that He performed within history to achieve His decree which was planned before the ages. The chief focus of the history of redemption is the messianic prophecies and their fulfillment.

(2) God's administration is fulfilled according to His decrees and predestined will.

Divine decree refers to "God's eternal plan or purpose which he established before creation to foreordain all things that come to pass" (Eph 1:4–5; 3:11). Our salvation has been predestined from before creation (2 Tim 1:9; Titus 1:2). In Matthew 25:34, the King says to those on His right, "Inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world." God planned and prepared for the salvation of His people through Jesus Christ before the creation of this world (John 1:1–4, 18; 17:5, 24; Prov 8:22–23). For this reason, Ephesians 1:9–10 describes Jesus' coming as the "administration suitable to the fullness of the times," signifying that God's plan for salvation was finally fulfilled through Jesus Christ, the Word who came in the flesh.

The apostle Paul also emphasized that God's administration is realized only in Christ (Eph 1:3, 4, 7, 9, 10, 12, 15, 20). However, he was astounded to realize that the notion of the Israelites as the sole "elect people" had collapsed after Jesus' coming and that the scope of God's plan to save had included the Gentiles. He described this as the "administration of the mystery" (Eph 3:9) because it had been kept hidden until then.

Today, God continues to intercede in the history of mankind and brings to fruition portions of His will according to the "administration suitable to the fullness of the times" and the "administration of the mystery." God's work of redemption will proceed without ceasing until His predestined will and plan are all completely fulfilled at the Second Coming of Jesus Christ.

2. The Focus and Scope of Redemptive History

(1) The focus of redemptive history is the salvation of fallen mankind.

God's grace springs forth from the center of the redemptive work. Redemptive history is characterized not by judgment and wrath, but by the patience, grace, and mercy of God, whose desire is to bring more people to salvation (1 Thess 5:9; 1 Tim 2:4; 2 Pet 3:9). There was not a single moment when God relinquished His will to save mankind. He granted unexpected grace every time mankind was on the brink of destruction due to their overflowing sin and wickedness. He desired to preserve the "godly seed" (2 Pet 2:5) and to save the holy "tree stump" for the end (Isa 6:13). In times of total despair, He gave vitality to life again. The greater the sins of mankind, the brighter His grace and mercy shined (Rom 5:20).

(2) The scope of redemption encompasses the redemption of the whole man and the recovery of the entire universe.

The sin of one man, Adam, caused God's wrath and curse to fall upon all mankind and all creation (Rom 5:12, 15, 17, 20). Thus, redemption became necessary for man holistically in spirit, soul, and body (Rom 8:19–23) and for the entire universe.

In Romans 8, the apostle Paul spoke of three general types of groaning that resulted from the fall. The first is the groaning of all creation (Rom 8:22). Because the curse has fallen upon all creation (Gen 3:17–19), the creation eagerly waits for the glorious day when the sons of God will be restored from the fall (Rom 8:19). This will be the day when the curse upon creation will be lifted to finally redeem it to original state.

The second is the groaning of the saints (Rom 8:23). Although they have already become God's children through faith in Jesus Christ, they are still in an imperfect state, still bound by sickness and death of the body. Thus, they eagerly long for the redemption of the body at the Second Coming of the Lord (1 Cor 15:50–58).

The third is the groaning of the Holy Spirit (Rom 8:26). The Holy Spirit intercedes in prayer for all saints with "groanings too deep for words" in hope that they may soon be redeemed. On that glorious day when God's redemptive work is complete, the groaning will cease, and the entire universe will be fully restored.

(3) Redemption is fulfilled through the atoning work of Jesus Christ.

The history of redemption began with the promise of the "woman's seed," given after the fall of Adam and Eve (Gen 3:15). After making this promise, God made garments of skin and covered Adam and his wife (Gen 3:21), foreshadowing how Jesus would come as the sacrificial lamb and shed His blood on the cross to cover the shame of mankind (John 1:29; 1 Cor 5:7; Rev 5:6). The sacrifice of life and the shedding of blood are required to make garments of skin.

The fact that God Himself made the garments and clothed them (Gen 3:21) implies that sinful man is entirely incapable of saving himself (Rom 3:10). It demonstrates the fact that salvation is possible only through God's sovereign grace.

As the first proclamation of the gospel was made in Genesis 3:15, the first proclamation of atonement was made in Genesis 3:21. Here, through the account of Adam and Eve, God foretold of His sovereign plan to redeem mankind through the sacrifice of Jesus Christ and the shedding of His precious blood. From this perspective, Genesis 3 contains the origin of the fall, the origin of the gospel that would open up the path to life for mankind, and the origin of the gospel of atonement.

3. Christ, the Apex of Redemptive History

The incarnate Jesus Christ stands at the apex of redemptive history because God's administration for redemption is revealed and fulfilled through His crucifixion.

(1) The Bible introduces the Messiah progressively.

The Old and New Testaments progressively introduce the Messiah in relation to the events and the flow

of each era (John 5:39, 45–47; Heb 1:1–2). Thus, our chief focus in reading the Bible must be on the Messiah and the redemptive history fulfilled by Him—how God saved mankind through Christ and how He will complete the work of salvation.

The messianic promise was first made in Genesis 3:15, which revealed that He would come as the woman's seed. The method of fulfilling this promise was progressively revealed through Isaiah's prophesy: "A virgin will be with child and bear a son" (Isa 7:14). It was finally fulfilled through the conception by the Holy Spirit and the virgin birth of Jesus Christ (Matt 1:18–25).

(2) Jesus Christ's death on the cross was predestined as part of God's administration of redemption.

Jesus' crucifixion was not an incidental or spontaneous event. When the time to bear the cross was imminent, Jesus said, "For indeed, the Son of Man is going as it has been determined" (Luke 22:22) and "For this purpose I came to this hour" (John 12:27). At the Garden of Gethsemane, Jesus prayed, seeking to do the Father's will and not His own (Matt 26:38–42; Luke 22:42; Heb 5:7). Paul added that Christ died for our sins "according to the Scriptures" (1 Cor 15:3). Thus, our Savior Jesus Christ came to this earth, lived, and died on the cross according to the Scriptures. Furthermore, He rose again on the third day after destroying the power of death in accordance with the Scriptures. He remained on the earth forty days after His resurrection and ascended into heaven in accordance with the Scriptures. His Second Coming will also be fulfilled in accordance with the scriptural prophecies. All these events were predestined as part of God's administration for redemption.

(3) Jesus Christ accomplished redemption once and for all through the cross, and its efficacy is everlasting.

Concerning Jesus Christ's redemptive work, the author of Hebrews says, "But through His own blood, He entered the holy place once for all, having obtained eternal redemption" (Heb 9:12).

The crucifixion of Jesus Christ was not a single independent event that occurred two thousand years ago; its power continues to save today, and its efficacy is everlasting. The Old Testament priests had to be continuously replaced when they died. Atonement sacrifices had to be prepared again and again, and the blood of the sacrifice had to be offered repeatedly (Heb 7:20–28). In contrast, Jesus Christ is the everlasting priest (Heb 7:21-24) and the perpetual sacrifice offered once for all (Rom 6:10; Heb 7:26–28; 9:26, 28; 10:10). The Greek word for *once* is evfa,pax (*ephapax*) and means "once for eternity." Jesus' atoning sacrifice on the cross achieved eternal salvation, not a temporal one.

(4) The work of redemption will be completed through the Second Coming.

The Old Testament testified of Jesus Christ numerous times and in various ways (Heb 1:1). Jesus Christ is the Word who came in the flesh according to the prophecies of the Old Testament. He came at the fullness of time and proclaimed the Word without rest while He was on the earth until His death on the cross (John 5:17; Gal 4:4). He worked with the zeal of the Lord to save sinners who were predestined for salvation from the beginning of time (Isa 9:7; 62:1; 2 Cor 11:2). He demonstrated His boundless love for mankind by shedding His blood on the cross (Rom 5:8; 1 John 4:10), thereby completing the work of redemption. Since then, the Holy Spirit has been working to bestow the virtues of Jesus Christ's work upon all those who are chosen to receive salvation, so to lead them toward salvation. God fulfilled the work of redemption through the First Coming, and He will perfect it through the Second Coming.

When the Lord returns at the Second Coming, those who died in Christ will be resurrected to a transformed body, and those who are alive will be transfigured to the completion of God's saving work (1 Cor 15:51–54; 1 Thess 4:16–17). After the thousand-year reign, the devil, who had caused the fall of this world, will be thrown into the lake of fire and brimstone. Then, the first heaven and the first earth will pass away, and the new heaven and the new earth will at last be established (Rev 20:1–10; 21:1).

The history of God's work of redemption, which has tirelessly run its course since the fall of Adam, will arrive at its glorious completion through the Second Coming of the Christ. It is our calling to be used

as God’s precious vessels until His work of redemption is complete.

CHAPTER 5

God's History of Redemption and the Genealogies

1. The Redemptive-historical Significance of the Genealogies

Man was created in God's likeness, but sinned and fell to the path of death. The history of redemption is the entire history of the salvation of mankind and the restoration of all creation. Thus, the major themes of redemptive history are creation, fall, and restoration. All attention is focused on who the Messiah, the seed of the woman, is and how God's people would be saved through Him. These major themes are clearly depicted through each person that appears in the genealogies. The history of redemption is concisely compressed into the names and ages of the persons recorded in the genealogies.

The Bible addresses the broad themes of redemptive history through the various sets of genealogies. For example, Genesis 5 records Adam's genealogy—ten generations from Adam to Noah. Genesis 11 records Shem's genealogy—ten generations from Shem to Abraham. Together, these genealogies reveal the order from Adam to Abraham, delineating how the Messiah would ultimately come as a descendant of Abraham. The uniqueness of the genealogies in Genesis 5 and Genesis 11 lies in the fact that they include a complete list of each person's birth, age at procreation, and life span even though they lived four thousand to six thousand years ago. The completeness of the genealogies affirms that God's redemptive work did not cease in any generation, but continued throughout history.

Following the genealogies in Genesis, the genealogy of Boaz (Ruth 4:18–22) connects Judah's son Perez to King David. This genealogy further confirms that the Messiah will come through the line of Judah, the fourth among Jacob's 12 sons. The genealogy in Matthew 1 summarizes the Old Testament history of redemption. The book opens with the verse, "The record of the genealogy of Jesus the Messiah, the son of David, the son of Abraham" (Matt 1:1), and introduces Jesus as the Messiah who came through the path shown in the genealogies of Genesis 5, Genesis 11, and Boaz.

Careful study of the Genesis genealogies will lead us to a clearer understanding of God's administration for redemption through Jesus Christ. All the descriptions of the persons, their names, and the time of their births and deaths offer significant insight into the circumstances surrounding each time period. Furthermore, they play important roles in uncovering different aspects of Jesus Christ, who would come through their lineage. In light of this, these genealogies are the core of the redemptive history, and studying them is definite a shortcut to comprehending God's administration.

There are no meaningless sounds in the world, and the biblical genealogies contain countless treasures to be discovered (1 Cor 14:10). We must not commit the grave mistake of overlooking them as meaningless enumeration of names. With the guidance of the Holy Spirit, we must discover and follow the rich vein of redemptive history, flows through the genealogies.

2. The Structure and Flow of the Genealogies

God's work in redemptive history is carried out in various ways and forms, but it has one clear purpose and direction: to send the promised Messiah for the redemption of His elect (Gen 3:15; Heb 1:1–2). The Bible is a record of how God carried out this plan and the genealogies, presented in various formats and structures, record this work in the most concise and condensed form.

(1) The structure of the genealogies

First, genealogies can be listed in one of two linear forms: linear ascending (listing up from descendants to the ancestors) or linear descending (listing down from ancestors to descendants). The genealogy in Luke 3 is typical of a genealogy listed in linear ascending order. It traces Jesus Christ's genealogy in

ascending order up to Adam and then to God.

In a linear descending genealogy, the main focus is on the last person on the list. For example, the focus in the genealogy of Genesis 5 is on the tenth generation—Noah. The genealogy in Genesis 11 lists Shem and his descendants down to Abraham (the tenth generation), with the primary focus on Abraham.

Second, genealogies can be categorized as vertical or segmented. Genealogies in vertical format record the direct line of offspring. Typical of the vertical genealogy format are the genealogy of the line of Cain in Genesis 4 and the genealogy of the line of Seth in Genesis 5.

Genealogies in segmented format simultaneously record the lineages of the different sons of one person. Examples of segmented genealogies are genealogies of Noah's sons, Ham and Japheth (Gen 10:2–20); Nahor's son (Gen 22:20–24); Abraham's sons through Keturah (Gen 25:1–6); Ishmael's sons (Gen 25:12-16); and Esau's sons (Gen 36:1–43).

(2) Two distinct flows of genealogies

Beginning with Cain's act of murder until Herod's conspiracy to kill the infant Jesus, Satan's relentless effort to thwart God's work ran parallel to the progression of redemptive history (Matt 2:1–13). While Genesis 4 contains the genealogy of Cain's line, which attempted to hinder the flow of redemptive history, Genesis 5 contains the genealogy of the patriarchs in Seth's line, who were central figures in the history of redemption. Hence, biblical genealogies are divided into two distinct lines: the genealogy of the faithful who lived to fulfill God's will, and that of the unfaithful whose lives stood against God's will.

The genealogies of the sons of faith are the center stem of the biblical genealogies. The most prominent are the genealogies of Adam in Genesis 5 and of Shem in Genesis 11, which show the lineage of faith from Adam to Abraham. Continuing the lineage of faith, the genealogy of Boaz in Ruth 4 lays out the lineage from Judah's son Perez down to King David. Finally, the genealogy in Matthew 1 explicitly reveals God's work of redemption by showing His covenant work extending through the forty-two generations from Abraham to Jesus Christ. Of course, there were wicked people in the genealogy of the faithful descendants, but they could not hinder or stop God's administration in the history of redemption.

Then, there were genealogies of the unbelieving descendants. The Bible also dedicates a considerable amount of writing to those genealogies. Cain's genealogy in Genesis 4 is a typical example, along with the genealogies of Ham's sons (Gen 10:6–20), Ishmael's sons (Gen 25:12–16), and Esau's descendants (Gen 36:1–43).

The genealogies of the faithful are recorded in vertical format continuously without being cut off or ceasing from the first patriarch down to the last, until they finally bear fruit with Jesus Christ. In contrast, the genealogies of the unfaithful come to an abrupt end. They opposed God and afflicted His chosen people while becoming founders of lavish cultures and civilizations. Ultimately, they perished and disappeared from history.

CHAPTER 6

The Genealogies in Genesis

Most of the genealogies in the Bible are concentrated in the Book of Genesis. For this reason, Genesis is also called the "book of genealogies" or the "story of lineages." It is the first of the 66 books of the Bible and reveals the origin of mankind as well as God's sovereign work and providence over each godly offspring.

The 50 chapters of Genesis covers a span of about 2,300 years of history, from the creation of Adam until the death of Joseph (see Excursus 1: "The Chronology of the Patriarchs"). Because it is impossible to record detailed accounts of God's providence in just 50 chapters, God compressed 2,300 years of history into genealogies. The chief message of the genealogical accounts in Genesis is that God will accomplish His administration to save mankind through the godly offspring and that He will surely fulfill His promise.

1. The Structure of Genesis

The book of Genesis can be organized into two parts: chapters 1–11 (part I) and chapters 12–50 (part II).

(1) Part 1 (chapters 1–11)

The theological term for the history outlined in Genesis 1–11 is "primeval history." These chapters cover a span of 2,023 years, which include the creation of heaven and earth, the creation and fall of Adam and Eve, the story of Cain and Abel, the great flood, the Tower of Babel, and the lives of Adam, Noah, and Abraham (see Excursus 1: "The Chronology of the Patriarchs").

God continued His work of salvation despite rebellion against His dominion—a rebellion that progressed and climaxed with the attempt to construct the Tower of Babel. In the last part of Genesis 11, Abraham departed from Ur of the Chaldeans and migrated to Haran. God's work depicted in Genesis 1–11 comes to an end with the singling out of Abraham from among all the descendants of Adam to set the stage for a new beginning.

(2) Part 2 (chapters 12–50)

Genesis 12–50 covers a span of only about 280 years, a seventh of the first part. However, the pages dedicated to writing the accounts of this span of time are five times longer. It includes the narrative of the birth of the chosen people of Israel and focuses on the lives of four patriarchs: Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, and Joseph. It is apparent, therefore, that even more generations were compressed into part I of Genesis through the genealogies (Gen 4–5; 10–11).

2. Ten Genealogies in Genesis

There are ten genealogies (תּוֹלְדוֹת: *tôlēdôt*, Hebrew word for "genealogy") in the book of Genesis. The first five belong to part I of Genesis (Gen 1–11) and the last five belong to part II of Genesis (Gen 12–50).

---

1 – Genealogy of heaven and earth (Gen 1:1–2:4; 2:4–4:26)

Genesis 2:4 This is the account of the heavens and the earth when they were created.

---

2 – Genealogy of Adam's family (Gen 5:1–6:8)

Genesis 5:1 This is the book of the generations of Adam.

---

3 – Genealogy of Noah's family (Gen 6:9–9:29)

Genesis 6:9 These are the records of the generations of Noah.

---

4 – Genealogy of Noah's sons (Gen 10:1–11:9)

Genesis 10:1 Now these are the records of the generations of Shem, Ham, and Japheth, the sons of Noah.

---

5 – Genealogy of Shem (Gen 11:10–26)

Genesis 11:10 These are the records of the generations of Shem.

---

6 – Genealogy of Terah (Abraham) (Gen 11:27–25:11)

Genesis 11:27 Now these are the records of the generations of Terah.

---

7 – Genealogy of Ishmael (Gen 25:12–18)

Genesis 25:12 Now these are the records of the generations of Ishmael, Abraham's son.

---

8 – Genealogy of Isaac (Gen 25:19–35:29)

Genesis 25:19 Now these are the records of the generations of Isaac, Abraham's son.

---

9 – Genealogy of Esau (Gen 36:1–37:1)

Genesis 36:1 Now these are the records of the generations of Esau (that is, Edom).

---

10 – Genealogy of Jacob (Gen 37:2–50:26)

Genesis 37:2 These are the records of the generations of Jacob.

The word *genealogy* (*toledoth*) appears in the heading of each genealogy and is used to either introduce the genealogy or transition into a new story. The presence of the word *toledoth* clarifies the fact that the passage is not just a mere list of names or a story. Furthermore, this specific format underscores the following important teachings.

First, the Genesis genealogies narrate the history of the fall, judgment, and restoration of man. The genealogy in Genesis 5 introduces Noah as the central figure who would deliver mankind from the catastrophic judgment of the flood after the fall of Adam. The genealogy in Genesis 11 introduces Abraham as the central figure in the work of salvation. He was singled out by God from among the scattered nations after their attempt to challenge Him through the construction of the Tower of Babel.

Second, the Genesis genealogies channel their focus on Abraham as the chief figure to pass on the work of redemption. This is why the division within the ten genealogies in Genesis is centered on Abraham—five before him and five after him.

Third, Genesis 1–11 is considered the introduction to the entire Bible and contains prophecies regarding the beginning and the end of redemptive history. The genealogies do not simply list the lineage of a person or family; they establish the structural framework for redemptive history.

3. Sepher Toledoth (Book of the Generations)

✻ Organized and presented for the first time in history

While begin with the Hebrew word תּוֹלְדוֹת (*tôlēdôt*), meaning "genealogy," "account," "order of birth," "generations," "descendants," or "biography," Genesis 5:1 uniquely begins the genealogy by pairing the word *tôlēdôth* with another word, סֵפֶר (*sēper*), which means "book": סֵפֶר תּוֹלְדוֹת (*sēper tôlĕdôt*).

Genesis 5:1 This is the book of the generations of Adam.

The "book of the generations" in Genesis 5:1 signifies "a record of family history," "lineage dating back to the ancestors," "a record of people's bloodline," and "an order of academic or philosophical system." The word *sēper* (סֵפֶר, "book") can also be translated as "writing," "letter," or "scroll." Other genealogies are simply *tôlēdôt* (תּוֹלֵדוֹת), but the genealogy in Genesis 5 is *sēper tôlĕdôt* (ספר תּוֹלדוֹת).

This difference is significant: Adam's genealogy in Genesis 5 is neither a simple list of names nor a mere appendix. It contains a significant amount of content, enough to be considered a complete book in and of itself. From the perspective of God's redemptive history, it holds great covenantal value, similar to a legally binding document or treaty.

The term *sepher toledoth*, that appears in the genealogy of the first man, Adam (Gen 5:1), appears also (in Greek) in the genealogy of the second man, Jesus Christ, in Matthew 1 (1 Cor 15:45–47).

Matthew 1:1 The book of the genealogy of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham.

Genesis 5:1 Book of the generations – *sēper tôlĕdôt* (סֵפֶר תּוֹלדוֹת)
Matthew 1:1 Book of the genealogy – *biblos geneseōs* (βίβλος γενέσεως)

Again, the terms used in Genesis 5:1 is not just *toledoth* ("generations"); it is *sepher toledoth* ("book of generations"). Likewise in Matthew 1, it is not just *genesis* ("genealogy"); it is *biblos geneseos* ("book of genealogies").

The genealogies of the first man (Gen 5:1) and the second man (Matt 1:1) both use the modifying word "book": סֵפֶר (*sēper*) in Hebrew, βίβλος (*biblos*) in Greek. The emphasis on "book" implies that the genealogy in Matthew 1, like the genealogy in Genesis 5, contains enough content to be considered a complete book on its own.

It is important to note that only the most crucial information is compressed into the genealogies. The genealogies replace an immeasurable amount of writing usually necessary to record a detailed narrative. This narrative would have recorded all of the great works that each patriarch performed in his generation as he battled against the world's wickedness (Ps 40:5; 71:15–16; 139:16–18; Heb 11:32).

John 21:25 And there are also many other things which Jesus did, which if they were written in detail, I suppose that even the world itself would not contain the books which were written.

What was the common message of these patriarchs (representatives) from each generation? What inspired them to continue their solitary struggle? It was the fulfillment of God's administration to save all mankind. For this purpose, the godly descendants of Seth and Shem continued faithfully to run their respective legs in the course of redemptive history and pass down the baton to the succeeding generations even through the tears, the agony, the loneliness, and the pain of being forsaken by the world.

The genealogies are full of the traces left behind by the godly descendants who fought the good fight until the coming of the promised seed. As we delve deeper into the study of the Genesis genealogies, we will be able to sense the magnitude of God's abundant grace and love. Ultimately, it was His fervent zeal that achieved salvation for mankind through the incarnation of Jesus Christ and His atoning work on the cross.

4. The Method of Studying the Genesis Genealogies

The ten genealogies in Genesis are not all recorded in the same format. Some genealogies are recorded

twice, and some are written in simple story format. The genealogy of Seth in Genesis 5 and the genealogy of Shem in Genesis 11 are written in the most typical genealogy format, including the details of the sons' names and ages. In this book, we will study the genealogies of Cain's line in Genesis 4, of Seth's in Genesis 5, and of Shem's in Genesis 11 with a focus on the factors listed below.

(1) The meaning of the names

A name distinguishes a person, place, or thing. A person's name not only validates his or her existence (Gen 2:19), but also connotes that person's character and personality. The greater significance of a name lies, however, in the fact that it not only follows a person throughout life, but also remains on earth even after death. For example, the name *Jacob* (יַעֲקֹב, *yaʿăqoeb*) means "one who takes by the heel" or "deceiver" and his new name *Israel* (יִשְׂרָאֵל, *yiśrāʾēl*) means "striven with God and with men and have prevailed." This demonstrates that Jacob became a new person with a new character by receiving a new name.

The faith of the parents greatly influences the naming of a child. A name does not just describe the child; it reveals the parents' hopes and expectations for the child, and it provides insight into the situation of the times. Thus, by studying someone's name, it is possible to obtain an extensive amount of information about that person and the times in which he or she was living.

For the godly patriarchs, who were men of prayer, assigning names to their sons was a solemn matter. The names most likely reflected their understanding of God's will and His desire toward their generation.

Although there may be many children in a family, the child who brings honor to the parental name is the pride of that family. Similarly, the names of the people specially listed in the genealogies of the godly offspring have not faded away even until now. Likewise, the names in the genealogies not only reflect the circumstances of the times, but also contain God's work of redemption that penetrates through the times. Therefore, it is meaningful to explore carefully the redemptive significance and the origin of the names in Adam's genealogy, especially in the line of Seth.

(2) Life span—birth and death

Another basic factor in the study of the genealogies is life span: when the patriarchs were born, how long they lived, and when they died. A person's life span reflects the historical circumstances surrounding his or her time. Therefore, it is necessary to examine how religious and social experiences of the different times may have affected each person's life span.

(3) Relationships with preceding and succeeding generations

It is also crucial to know where each person lived within the historical timeline because it helps us to understand the person's relationship with the preceding and succeeding generations. It also aids in determining which other patriarchs were his contemporaries. Ultimately, we can discover the path and method through which God's administration for redemption was delivered down from the older generations to the younger generations.

Of special importance is the length of time during which Adam and Noah—the first and second ancestors of mankind—lived contemporaneously with their direct descendants. This will bring to light many important facts that once had been unknown and will lead us to a better understanding of God's redemptive providence. In summary, understanding the patriarchs' relationship with their preceding and succeeding generations through a close study of their births and life spans will confirm that even the years recorded within these genealogies progressively reveal the Messiah, who would come as the promised seed of the woman (Gen 3:15).

(4) Progressive revelation of the coming of the Messiah

The Bible progressively reveals Jesus Christ (Luke 24:27, 44; John 5:39, 45–47; Heb 1:1–3). The format

of the genealogies and the meanings of the recorded names contain the hope and anticipation of how the redemptive promise would unfold with each successive generation and eventually be fulfilled through Jesus Christ. Discovering this will greatly broaden our perspective of the flow of redemptive history. For example, Adam is connected to Noah through Enoch and Methuselah. Noah is connected to Abraham through Shem and Eber. In their respective times, Adam and Noah play the role of the backbone in the history of redemption.

(5) Additional information about important characters

There are some parts of the genealogies that deviate from the standard format in order to present an additional information for certain generations. These additional details signal important junctions in the flow of the genealogies and also point to Jesus Christ, the chief figure in redemption history.

For example, additional details were included for the following persons:

- In the genealogy of Cain in Genesis 4—Cain, and Lamech (sixth generation)
- In the genealogy of Seth in Genesis 5—Adam, Enoch, Lamech, and Noah
- In the genealogy of Shem in Genesis 10–11—Shem, Eber, Peleg, and Abram

Out of all the persons enumerated in the genealogies, we must pay special attention to the persons listed above.

(6) Historical placement of the genealogies

The time period in which a genealogy emerges has great redemptive significance because genealogies are often recorded at a crucial turning point or junction in the history of redemption.

In the biblical genealogies, the most important person often appears at the end and becomes the starting point of a new era. Consequently, persons listed at either the beginning or the end of a genealogy hold great redemptive significance. Good examples are Adam, the first person mentioned in the genealogy of creation; Noah, the last person (tenth generation) in his genealogy (Gen 5:32); Terah and his son, Abraham, the last persons in the genealogy that follow the generation of Noah (Gen 11:26); and Joseph in the account of Jacob's lineage (Gen 37:2–50:26).

The Genesis genealogies are especially meaningful in that they present an overview of God's unfolding work in the history of redemption. If we study the genealogies with the aforementioned factors in mind, we will discover the intimate connection between God's redemptive work and the genealogies.

The genealogies contain God's administration, which has life and actively moves within the genealogies and guides the great flow of redemptive history. They also contain traces of God's revelations that testify of the coming of Jesus Christ, the Messiah (Luke 24:27, 44; John 5:39, 45–47). Further study of the Genesis genealogies will cause Moses' words to resonate clearly: "Remember the days of old, consider the years of all generations" (Deut 32:7).

CHAPTER 7

Years of the Generations in Genesis

1. Perspective on the Inerrancy of the Bible

An increasing number of modern theologians believe that the Bible contains errors. However, the Bible is the Word of the living God and is therefore 100% accurate and inerrant. This principle of inerrancy applies to the entire Bible. Accordingly, the genealogies in the Bible are also part of the accurate and inerrant Word of God; the records of the persons who appear in each genealogy, including their lives and years, are all without error.

There are some genealogies with omissions. For instance, there are omissions in the genealogy of Jesus Christ in Matthew 1:8. Three kings—Ahaziah (2 Kgs 8:25), Jehoash (2 Kgs 12:1), and Amaziah (2 Kgs 14:1)—are omitted between Joram and Uzziah. In Matthew 1:11, Jehoiakim is omitted after Josiah (2 Kgs 23:34; 1 Chr 3:16). These omissions imply that the genealogy in the Gospel of Matthew was not written for the purpose of preserving a complete historical record or for calculating years. Matthew recorded the names of important persons from each era that he deemed necessary for the purpose of the genealogy and omitted others. He composed three groups of 14 generations each and recorded a total of 42 generations. Matthew 1:17 states, “Therefore all the generations from Abraham to David are fourteen generations; and from David to the deportation to Babylon fourteen generations; and from the deportation to Babylon to the time of Christ fourteen generations.”

We must not waver in our faith that the biblical genealogies are part of the perfect and inerrant Word of God. Not all genealogies were written for the mere purpose of recording and calculating the years; certain generations were intentionally omitted in order to communicate God’s specific will.

2. Years of the Generations in Genesis 5 and Genesis 11

Together, the genealogies in Genesis 5 and Genesis 11 contain 20 generations of patriarchs. The genealogy of the line of Seth, which covers the generations from Adam to Abraham, contains no chronological gaps.

In his study of the Genesis genealogies, Old Testament scholar and creation scientist Henry M. Morris based his calculations of the ten generations from Adam to Noah on the years of birth and death. He argues that there are no gaps in these genealogies:

> There is no reason to think there are any “gaps” in this record, or that the years are anything other than normal years (except for the quizzical possibility that the original year was 360 days long, instead of the present 365¼). The record is perfectly natural and straightforward and is obviously intended to give both the necessary genealogical data to denote the promised lineage and also the only reliable chronological framework we have for the antediluvian period of history.[3]

Old Testament theologian Travis R. Freeman also believes that the genealogies in Genesis 5 and Genesis 11 flow without gaps or disconnections. Freeman states:

> Some modern theologians believe not only that Genesis 5 and 11 contain the names of actual historical figures, but that those names form a continuous (without generational omissions) linear genealogy from Adam to Abraham. While they readily acknowledge fluidity as a fairly common occurrence in ancient genealogies, they reason that the occurrence of fluidity in some genealogies does not prove fluidity in all genealogies. They see the genealogies of Genesis 5 and 11 as two of the many exceptions to the fluidity rule.[4]

In his analysis of early biblical genealogies, Samuel R. Külling begins by acknowledging that many biblical genealogies, such as those in Ezra 7 and Matthew 1, contain gaps. He believes, however, that biblical genealogies come in more than one genre. He describes the genealogies of Genesis 5 and Genesis

11 as chronological genealogies because of the many numerical notations therein, especially the fathers' ages at procreation, and claims that there are no gaps or omissions within each of the two genealogies. He emphasizes that the purpose of the passages in Genesis stating Abraham's age at Isaac's birth and Isaac's age at Jacob's birth was to create an accurate chronology.[5]

What, then, is the basis for the belief that the chronological records of the genealogies in Genesis 5 and Genesis 11 are inerrant? There are three arguments.

First, the genealogies in Genesis 5 and Genesis 11 accurately narrate the time of birth, age at procreation, and life span for all 20 generations of patriarchs. Such precise notations of years cannot be found in other genealogies and thus impart additional credibility to these records. The narrative of the 20 generations of patriarchs is an actual historical and chronological record. If the purpose had not been to record actual accounts, there would have been no reason for such a detailed narrative.

Second, the order of the 20 patriarchs in Genesis 5 and Genesis 11 does not contradict any other genealogy in the Bible. The order of names in the genealogies in Genesis 5 and Genesis 11 is perfectly consistent with the order of names in the genealogies in 1 Chronicles 1:1–4, 24–27.

(1 Chr 1:1) Adam, Seth, Enosh
(1 Chr 1:2) Kenan, Mahalalel, Jared
(1 Chr 1:3) Enoch, Methuselah, Lamech
(1 Chr 1:4) Noah, Shem, Ham, and Japheth
(1 Chr 1:24) Shem, Arpachshad, Shelah
(1 Chr 1:25) Eber, Peleg, Reu
(1 Chr 1:26) Serug, Nahor, Terah
(1 Chr 1:27) Abram (Abraham)

Moreover, the genealogies in Genesis 5 and Genesis 11 are in agreement with the genealogy of Jesus Christ in Luke 3. In Luke 3:34–38, however, there is a difference in the case of one person. Cainan is listed between Arphaxad (Arpachshad) and Shelah in Luke 3, but not in Genesis 11. The appearance of Cainan, however, does not affect the calculation of years (see Excursus 5: "Perspective on Cainan").

Unless there is definite proof that there is a gap in the chronological order of the years, it is far more accurate to base calculations on the Hebrew text than on noncanonical records that could be incomplete or inaccurate.

Third, the genealogy in Matthew 1 and the genealogies in Genesis 5 and Genesis 11 are separate genealogies recorded for different purposes. The genealogy in Matthew has omissions compared to other historical records in the Bible because the purpose of this genealogy was not to just narrate a historical bloodline. By the inspiration of the Holy Spirit, Matthew was calling attention to the fruition of God's plan for redemption.

The genealogy in Matthew contains three groups of 14 generations of persons who played critical roles in shedding light on God's work of redemption until it reached its zenith with the coming of Jesus Christ (Matt 1:17). It is not an exhaustive list of all the generations in biblical history. Matthew also began the genealogy of Jesus Christ with Abraham so that the Jewish audience may understand that Jesus is their Messiah and accept Him. In light of this, the genealogy in Matthew placed its focus on the continuity of faith rather than on a narration of the births and lives of every descendant. It was written from the redemption perspective.

Therefore, skepticism regarding the historicity and accuracy of the genealogies in Genesis 5 and Genesis 11 based on the genealogy in Matthew 1 is unfounded. If we use the records in Genesis 5 and Genesis 11 for our calculations, we will once again realize the astounding inerrancy of the Bible and the profoundness of the spiritual world.

3. A Point of Reference for Calculating the Years

Although there are many genealogies in the Bible, not every genealogy records the years of birth or death; thus, reference points are necessary. Selecting precisely recorded dates as reference points and using them to perform calculations forward and backward in time will help to build a complete chronological timeline. One such biblical reference point is the year of the exodus.

(1) The year of the exodus is 1446 BC.

The year of the exodus is an important reference point for calculating the generations of the patriarchs who lived prior to the exodus. The first record that assists in calculating the year of the exodus is found in the records of the kings in 1 Kings 6:1:

> Now it came about in the four hundred and eightieth year after the sons of Israel came out of the land of Egypt, in the fourth year of Solomon's reign over Israel, in the month of Ziv which is the second month, that he began to build the house of the Lord.

Furthermore, 2 Chronicles 3:1–2 confirms the specific date that Solomon began to build the house of the Lord: the second day in the second month.

> Then Solomon began to build the house of the Lord in Jerusalem on Mount Moriah, where the Lord had appeared to his father David, at the place that David had prepared, on the threshing floor of Ornan the Jebusite. [2]And he began to build on the second day in the second month of the fourth year of his reign.

It is commonly known that Solomon succeeded the throne in 970 BC and began the construction work for the temple in 966 BC, the fourth year of his reign. Thus, calculations show that the year of the exodus was 1446 BC (966 + 480 = 1,446). While there are theologians who believe that the exodus occurred in the thirteenth century BC, the vast majority of conservative theologians agree that it is more biblically correct to view the time of the exodus as 1446 BC.

(2) The Israelites were in Egypt for 430 years.

It is clearly recorded in the Book of Exodus as follows:

> Exodus 12:40–41 Now the time that the sons of Israel lived in Egypt was four hundred and thirty years. [41]And it came about at the end of four hundred and thirty years, to the very day, that all the hosts of the Lord went out from the land of Egypt.

So if the year of the exodus was 1446 BC, then the year that the Israelites entered Egypt was 1876 BC (1,446 + 430 = 1,876).

(3) The time period between Abraham's birth and Israel's migration to Egypt was 290 years.

Abraham had Isaac at the age of 100 (Gen 21:5). Isaac had Jacob at the age of 60 (Gen 25:26). Jacob migrated to Egypt at the age of 130 (Gen 47:9). Thus, 290 years passed between Abraham's birth and Jacob's migration to Egypt (100 + 60 + 130 = 290). By adding 1,446 (the year of the exodus), 430 years in Egypt, and 290 years between Abraham's birth and Israel's migration into Egypt, we obtain the year of Abraham's birth: 2166 BC (1,446 + 430 + 290 = 2,166).***6***

Hence, unspecified dates of events and births can be accurately calculated by using reference points in the Bible. By building a chronological timeline for the 20 generations of patriarchs from Adam to Abraham, we are able to calculate the year of birth for the last person (Abraham). By using the year of Abraham's birth as a reference point, we can also accurately calculate the years during which the 20 generations of patriarchs lived.

From this point, we will continue to examine God's divine administration for redemption as revealed through the genealogies in Genesis 4–5 and Genesis 10–11.



מדבר צין הוא קדש
ים המלח
שבט
מדבר סין
מדבר שור
ארץ פלשתים
שמעון
שבט
לוח המסעות במדבר
אשר על פי ה' יסעו ועל פי ה' יחנו

PART THREE

The Genealogy According to the Line of Cain

Genesis 3 is the account of man's original sin and Genesis 4 is a record of subsequent sins committed after the original sin. The impact of the original sin committed by Adam was not limited just to him; its influence spread to all of his descendants. The results of sin inherited from Adam first became apparent in Cain, but this sinfulness was also not limited to Cain. Sin prospered and grew increasingly strong in the people who were unable to restrain its powers through the Word of God. Sinfulness and wickedness became common traits apparent in all of the descendants in the line of Cain. The cycle of sin and violence that began with Cain's act of murder advanced in the succeeding generations and reached its culmination during the generation of Lamech.

The genealogy according to the line of Cain is a "genealogy apart from God"; any mention of God's name and His works is conspicuously absent.

In this chapter, we will study the genealogy of the line of Cain recorded in Genesis 4 and examine the lives of his descendants. We will learn about how unbelief continued to reappear in their lives as they followed after Cain's sinfulness, and we will trace the spiritual root of that unbelief.

CHAPTER 8

The Descendants of Cain

1. Cain (קַיִן): gotten one, received

Adam and Eve had relations and gave birth to their first son, Cain, by the grace of God (Gen 4:1). He brought great joy to them because he was the first son born to them after they received the promise of the woman's seed in Genesis 3:15.

> Genesis 4:1 Now the man had relations with his wife Eve, and she conceived and gave birth to Cain, and she said, "I have gotten a manchild with the help of the Lord."

Eve expressed her joy after giving birth to Cain, saying, "I have gotten a manchild with the help of the Lord." The name *Cain* was Eve's confession of faith after receiving the first fruit of mankind. She believed that she had received this son with "the help of the Lord," by His absolute grace and guidance. It is evident that Adam and Eve had great expectations for their first son. They named him with the hope that the lost paradise would be reconstructed through him.

In connection with the birth of her first son, Eve called God by a new name, *Jehovah* (or *Yahweh*), meaning the "Lord of redemption." This was an expression of her faith in the promise of the woman's seed written in Genesis 3:15 and her hope for salvation.

Eve's gratefulness and praises to God are also apparent in the name *Cain*. The name itself is her prayer of thanksgiving for the grace that saved her from pain and danger during her first childbirth after the curse had fallen on them (Gen 3:16). Her confession indicates that she had repented and lived by faith in God's promise after being banished from the Garden of Eden. Furthermore, the fact that Cain and Abel made offerings to God even after many years had passed demonstrates that their parents must have nurtured their faith in God. Then, if Cain was born to Adam and Eve by the grace of God, and if he had been raised in faith, what caused him to kill his brother?

(1) Why Cain became a murderer

The problem began when Cain and Abel made offerings to God. God had regard for Abel and his offering, but for Cain and his offering He had no regard. What was the difference between the two men?

First, Cain had lost his faith.

Hebrews 11:4 states, "By faith Abel offered to God a better sacrifice than Cain, through which he obtained the testimony that he was righteous, God testifying about his gifts, and through faith, though he is dead, he still speaks." The superiority of Abel's offering made in faith was manifested in his offering of the "firstlings" of the flock. Because Abel possessed faith in God, he willingly presented the best of what he had. God has always consecrated the first of the fruits and the first son (firstborn) as His own. However, there is no mention of "first" with regard to Cain's offering (Gen 4:3–5).

> Exodus 23:19 You shall bring the choice first fruits of your soil into the house of the Lord your God. You are not to boil a kid in the milk of its mother.
> Proverbs 3:9 Honor the Lord from your wealth, and from the first of all your produce.
> Ezekiel 48:14 Moreover, they shall not sell or exchange any of it, or alienate this choice portion of land; for it is holy to the Lord.

Thus, God had no regard for faithless Cain or his offering; though Cain had believed in God at one

point, he lost his faith by the time he made his offering to God.

> Proverbs 15:8 The sacrifice of the wicked is an abomination to the Lord, but the prayer of the upright is His delight.
> Romans 12:1 I urge you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, to present your bodies a living and holy sacrifice, acceptable to God, which is your spiritual service of worship.

Second, Cain missed the opportunity to repent.

After God rejected his offering, Cain should have realized that it happened because he had lost his faith. He should have asked Abel to mediate on his behalf in giving another offering to God. Cain's response, however, was an unexpected one. He became very angry before the Lord, and his countenance fell. Becoming angry before God is nothing less than the manifestation of darkness.

> Genesis 4:5–6 But for Cain and for his offering He had no regard. So Cain became very angry and his countenance fell. [6]Then the Lord said to Cain, "Why are you angry? And why has your countenance fallen?"

God saw that sin had its desire in Cain and warned him to overcome it (Gen 4:7). Cain, however, did not heed this divine warning and missed the opportunity to turn back and repent. Thus, sin had its way with Cain so that he ultimately struck and killed Abel, becoming the first murderer and committing the first fratricide. Nonetheless, in His mercy, God sought out Cain once again and offered him a final chance to repent. He asked Cain, "Where is Abel your brother?" (Gen 4:9). This is similar to how God questioned Adam by asking, "Where are you?" (Gen 3:9) after he ate the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil and hid from God. God asked in this manner although He already knew everything. Just as He had known exactly where Adam was hiding when He questioned him, He also knew what had happened to Abel.

God was waiting for repentance as He asked Cain with the underlying meaning, "Shouldn't you have protected your little brother instead of killing him?" God expected Cain to confess, "God, I killed Abel. I have sinned. Please forgive me." God wanted to continue to look after and give His love to Cain. Instead of repenting, however, Cain boldly and impudently opposed God, saying, "Am I my brother's keeper?" (Gen 4:9). In the end, Cain not only killed Abel, but also challenged God's Word and missed all the opportunities to repent.

Third, Cain belonged to the wrong side.

What was the primary reason for Cain's failure to guard his faith? The Bible points out that he belonged to the wrong side. 1 John 3:8–9 states that Cain was "of the devil" and that he was not born of God. Cain did not have "His seed." 1 John 3:12 reiterates that Cain slew his brother because Cain was "of the evil one."

By killing his brother, Cain became the first person to violate blatantly the commandment of loving one's brother. This is why the apostle John explained that Cain was of the devil's seed (offspring) which belongs to the evil one, and Cain committed murder essentially because he did not have God's seed (1 John 3:8–9).7

Cain ended up belonging to the evil one because he accepted the thoughts of the devil (John 13:2). Cain was born by the grace of God after Adam had relations with Eve. Initially, Cain had faith in God because of his parents' influence, evident by his offering to God. However, Satan secretly sowed into Cain the thoughts of the devil and the thoughts of darkness (Matt 13:25–30).

> Matthew 13:25–28 But while men were sleeping, his enemy came and sowed tares also among the wheat, and went away. [26]But when the wheat sprang up and bore grain, then the tares became evident also. [27]And the slaves of the landowner came and said to him, "Sir, did you not sow good seed in your field? How then does it have tares?" [28]And he said to them, "An enemy has done this!" And the slaves said to him, "Do you want us, then, to go and gather them up?"

This is similar to how Satan sowed disbelief into the hearts of the Israelites with the first coming of Jesus Christ. Jesus exposed the true identity of those who claimed to be children of Abraham, saying, "You are of your father the devil" (John 8:44). Although they called themselves children of Abraham, they did not perform the deeds of their father Abraham (John 8:39).

The same people who were born in the land of Israel and boasted of their pure lineage rejected Jesus and crucified him. This shows that their father was not Abraham, but the devil. They were not sons of God's kingdom, but sons of the evil one (Matt 13:38). Hence, John the Baptist vehemently rebuked, "You brood of vipers, . . . do not begin to say to yourselves, 'We have Abraham for our father'" (Matt 3:7–9; Luke 3:7–8). This was a sharp rebuke against people who boasted of their "elect" status. They pretended to be holy, but their hearts were filled with evil intentions. The unrepentant Pharisees and Sadducees asserted that they were children of Abraham, but in truth, they were children of the serpent through whom Satan had deceived and corrupted Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden.***8***

Jesus called the apostle Peter "Satan" when he stood against the will of God, even though Peter had been one of His foremost disciples (Matt 16:23). During the age of the early church, Ananias made an offering, perhaps a large one, but his heart was full of lies and deception. Peter, being full of the Holy Spirit, said of him, "Satan filled [his] heart," (Acts 5:3). False prophets in sheep's clothing may appear righteous and holy, but they are ravenous wolves, full of deceit and lies (Matt 7:15). Today, we must consider whether our lives have such characteristics. We must reflect ourselves upon the mirror of God's Word to see if we are habitually deceitful or have the deceptive characteristics of Satan.

(2) Cain, a model of the evil one

Through the parable of the weeds in Matthew 13:24–30, Jesus explained how people become children of darkness from moment to moment without realizing it, and how they become enslaved by Satan just as Cain had been. The main point of the parable is that the master had sown only good seeds, but the enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat and went away (Matt 13:25). Jesus repeated this parable to His disciples and explained to them that the One who sows the good seed is the Son of Man (Matt 13:37), and the enemy who sows the tares is "the evil one" (Matt 13:28, 39). Regarding Judas Iscariot, the Bible states, ". . . the devil having already put into the heart of Judas Iscariot, the son of Simon, to betray Him" (Luke 22:3; John 13:2, 27). This is an example of Satan sowing tares. Jesus further explained that the good seeds represent the "sons of the kingdom," while the tares represent the "sons of the evil one" (Matt 13:38).

Judas heard Jesus' messages about the kingdom of heaven along with the rest of the disciples. Yet, he became a son of the evil one, not a son of heaven. Likewise, Cain belonged to Satan and possessed his traits because he had been more receptive to Satan's thoughts than to the Word of God.

The good seed signifies the Word of God (Luke 8:11). Peter compares the Word of God to a "seed which is . . . imperishable" (1 Pet 1:23). The Word of God is the "good seed," and the sons of the kingdom who receive this seed are also the "good seed" (Matt 13:38; John 6:63). Those who receive the Word of God become sons of the kingdom of heaven, but those who reject the Word of God and accept the thoughts of the devil become sons of the evil one.

The serpent deceived Eve with its craftiness in the Garden of Eden and caused her to fall (2 Cor 11:3). What is the identity of this craftiness? According to 2 Corinthians 11:4, it is a different gospel, another Jesus, and a different spirit. Cain belonged to Satan because he had received the devil's seed, a different gospel, another Jesus, and a different spirit.

Furthermore, Cain was like the ones described in Romans 8:5–9. He lived according to the flesh with his mind set on the things of the flesh and was, therefore, hostile toward God. He became a being that belongs to the devil and was led by the spirit of the devil (Rom 8:12–14). For certain, Cain was a son

born to Adam and Eve. From his offering to God, it is acknowledged that he had believed in God at first. However, Satan planted the thoughts of darkness in him (lies and murder [John 8:44]). This is why he killed his brother, and his fruit was his title as the first murderer. Cain forsook the God he had first believed in; he abandoned God and became an "offspring of evildoers" who do not see it fit to acknowledge God any longer (Isa 1:4; Rom 1:28).

As Matthew 7:15–18 states, "You will know them by their fruits," Cain, who became a murderer, was clearly of the devil with the devil's traits. John 8:44 explains that the sons of the devil follow the desires of the devil, who is a murderer and a liar.

> John 8:44 You are of your father the devil, and you want to do the desires of your father. He was a murderer from the beginning, and does not stand in the truth, because there is no truth in him. Whenever he speaks a lie, he speaks from his own nature; for he is a liar, and the father of lies.

As a result, Cain turned out contrary to Eve's expectation and confession in Genesis 4:1 which she had made in joy and with hope after having given birth to him.

(3) Desires of sin dwelling in Cain

The identity of the evil seed that dwelt in Cain is vividly described by Paul, the great apostle of the early church, in Romans 7:20: "But if I am doing the very thing I do not wish, I am no longer the one doing it, but sin which dwells in me." Romans 7:20 identifies the seed of darkness that was in Cain as "sin." Sin always involves the whole person, both the inner and the outer person. In Romans 7, Paul repeatedly exposed sin as the cause of the tragic conflict within him. This is similar to God's rebuke to Cain: "If you do well, will not your countenance be lifted up? And if you do not do well, sin is crouching at the door; and its desire is for you, but you must master it" (Gen 4:7).

The Bible warns that there is woe for those who walk in the "way of Cain" (Jude 1:11). In order to escape that woe, Christians today must learn to master sin. The parable of the tares teaches us that no one, including the chosen believer, is exempt from becoming Satan's target. The tares are sown during the night, and the results become evident only when they bear fruit.

Therefore, it is important for believers to stay alert and awake at all times so that tares may not be sown in the field of the good seed, the seed of God's Word (Prov 4:23; 16:32; Matt 13:19, 25–27). Otherwise, even believers can acquire Satan's traits and become his perpetrators regardless of how much faith they may have built up over the years.

The Bible says that man is enslaved by what overcomes him (John 8:34; Rom 6:16; Titus 3:3; 2 Pet 2:19). Believers must become God's servants and bear fruit resulting in sanctification (Rom 6:22). They must become a people for His own possession, zealous to do good deeds (Eph 2:10; Titus 2:14).

(4) Cain settled in the land of Nod

Even after having committed sin, Cain shamelessly objected to God's punishment, claiming that it was more than he could bear (Gen 4:13–14). His words reveal no trace of repentance or grief over what he did. His attitude was a direct contrast to that of the repentant psalmist who cried, "Do not cast me away from Thy presence, and do not take Thy Holy Spirit from me" (Ps 51:11).

What were the curses that fell upon Cain the murderer? The first was this: "When you cultivate the ground, it shall no longer yield its strength to you" (Gen 4:12). This curse was much graver than the one that had fallen upon Adam (Gen 3:17–18) because the land was to reject Cain altogether. Adam had to toil in order to eat the produce of the earth; but for Cain, it would not even produce any fruit at all. Regardless of Cain's labor, there would be no harvest. The second curse was that Cain would be cast away from the earth (Gen 4:12). His life of wandering had thus begun and there would no longer be any more rest or peace in his life.

Likewise, sin keeps us from God. In fact, sin cuts off all of our relationships. When our relationship with God becomes distant, our relationship with all creation also becomes distant as a result. Furthermore, the relationships that we have within our communities will also fail so that we eventually feel isolated and alienated.

After the sons of Cain turned their backs on God, they settled in the land of Nod to the east of Eden (Gen 4:16). The name *Nod* (נוֹד) means "wandering," "vagrant," or "fugitive." This describes the state of mankind after departing from God: restless wandering without a definite goal or purpose in life. This is a direct contrast to Eden, the land of joy. No sinner, regardless of who he or she is, can escape the curse upon this earth. The only way to break the yoke of this curse and enjoy wealth and prosperity is to believe in Jesus Christ.

Cain built a city as he settled in the land of Nod (Gen 4:17). The Hebrew word used here is *ʿîr* (עִיר), meaning "city" or "town." This construction of the first city (city-state) reveals an underlying desire to dilute God's curse that had cast Adam and Eve out of Eden, and to completely separate themselves from God's intervention by unifying the human efforts together and building a high city tower. The construction of cities by men who have forsaken God comes to a climax with the construction of the Tower of Babel in Genesis 11.

Restless wandering began the moment man forsook God to live independently of His care in their man-built cities. Their dwelling place was a land in which they could gather nothing but dust despite their effort and struggle; it was truly the land of "wandering" (Nod). After building the city, Cain named it *Enoch* after his son—evidence that he desired for his descendants to inherit his seedbed of sin and wickedness (Gen 4:17).

2. Enoch (חֲנוֹךְ): dedication,[9] initiated,[10] teacher[11]

Cain's son, Enoch, shares the same name with Enoch, the sixth generation in the line of Seth. However, Enoch from the line of Seth was a godly man who reached the highest peak of faith, whereas Enoch from the line of Cain was an ungodly and corrupt man. Enoch was the first son born to Cain after he departed from God (Gen 4:16–17) and was, thus, the first fruit of humanism. It can be inferred that Cain named his son *Enoch*, meaning "dedication," with a hope that he might be dedicated to the success of his humanistic lineage.

The birth of Enoch is described in greater detail than any other person in the line of Cain.

> Genesis 4:16–17 Then Cain went out from the presence of the Lord, and settled in the land of Nod, east of Eden. [17]And Cain had relations with his wife and she conceived, and gave birth to Enoch; and he built a city, and called the name of the city Enoch, after the name of his son.

The following significant points can be construed from the meanings of the name *Enoch* ("dedication," "initiation," or "teacher"):

1. Cain built a city and named it "Enoch" after his son. The name *Enoch* was *dedicated* to the purpose of flaunting the citadel (city-state) of humanism built by those who had forsaken God.
2. Those who departed from God overthrew all the good and beautiful things that they had once enjoyed while they were with God. They *initiated* a movement to live according to the human will and not the divine will.
3. Enoch became a *teacher* (*beginning, source, ancestor*) who instructed in the ways of rebellion, disbelief, and the betrayal of God.

The name *Enoch*, in all likelihood, became very well known after Cain's city was named after him.

Presumably, the person Enoch was famous throughout the land as well, but his name will not be remembered by God, because he had nothing to do with God.

Enoch was like those described in Revelation 3:1, "you have a name that you are alive, but you are dead," in God's eyes. His name had no significance in the spiritual world. Conversely, the names of the precious saints, though they may appear insignificant in this world, will be written in the book of life and will not be erased (Rev 3:5). Jesus died on the cross to fulfill the will of the Father, and as a result, God awarded Him with "the name which is above every name" (Phil 2:9). To all those who follow in Jesus' steps, God will also grant the honor of having their names written in the book of life, never to be blotted out (Phil 4:3).

Cain and his son Enoch started off without God. Cain named the first son born to him after his independence from God *Enoch*, meaning "dedication," "initiation (start)," and "teacher." Then, he named the city that they built for themselves "Enoch." Cain and Enoch's humanistic pursuits devoid of God were truly grand. They probably aspired to build for themselves a magnificent city, a godless paradise on earth reminiscent of the Garden of Eden.

However, what was the ultimate destiny of these men that had begun their lives without God? They became fathers of great massacres, violence, and wickedness. They may have thought that the great city of Enoch was so close to becoming the paradise on earth. Despite its outward appearance, it was a city that only increased in terms of sins and wickedness, murder, corruption, and injustice.

There are also many times when we start doing things in our lives without God, such as planning extravagant events, businesses, marriages, and retirements. God is the beginning of all things. From start to finish, He will guide us when we pray to Him, seek answers from the Bible, and turn to His people for advice. He will take responsibility for us until our final goals are achieved.

3. Irad (עִירָד): runner, fleet,[12] boastful[13]

Irad was Enoch's son. He was a braggart, as the meaning of his name indicates. Presumably, he was the kind of person who fled from God's presence, committing all kinds of sins and saying, "Where is God? God cannot see what I am doing!" He probably had no fear or hesitation about committing the grave sin of denying God's existence. The Bible calls this kind of person the most foolish of all.

> Psalm 10:4 The wicked, in the haughtiness of his countenance, does not seek Him. All his thoughts are, "There is no God."
> Psalm 14:1 The fool has said in his heart, "There is no God." They are corrupt, they have committed abominable deeds; there is no one who does good.

God not only sees our actions, He also searches the depths of our hearts to discover the hidden motivation behind those actions (Ps 94:9; Prov 5:21; Jer 17:10). He sees not only the present, but also the past and the future (Ps 139:1–3). We cannot deceive God and nothing can be hidden from Him, for He has seven eyes (Zech 3:9; 4:10; Rev 5:6). He is omnipresent; He is everywhere in the entire universe and watches over all things like the light of seven days (Isa 30:26). His eyes are like fire, moving to and fro throughout the earth so that no one can flee from them (2 Chr 16:9). Proverbs 15:3 states that His eyes watch "the evil and the good." Psalm 33 states, "The Lord looks from heaven; He sees all the sons of men." It continues, "From His dwelling place He looks out on all the inhabitants of the earth," and concludes that He understands all their works (Ps 33:13–15). Job 34:21–22 states, "For His eyes are upon the ways of a man, and He sees all his steps. There is no darkness or deep shadow where the workers of iniquity may hide themselves." Regardless of how deep a person hides or how far a person runs within the God-created time and space, God can command all heaven and earth to stand together, so that He stands exactly in that hiding place (Isa 48:13).

Although none of the Israelites knew that Achan had stolen the mantle, the gold, and the silver, God

knew and exposed his sin (Josh 7:1–26). No one knew that Michal had looked down from her window at King David as he was leaping and dancing and despised him in her heart (2 Sam 6:16). God, however, saw and knew this. As a result, she remained childless until the day she died (2 Sam 6:23).

No one other than Ananias' wife knew that Ananias had held back some of the proceeds from the sale of their property. God revealed his evil intention to Peter, and after Peter had rebuked Ananias for his evil deed, Ananias fell and died on the very same day (Acts 5:1–11). Truly, those who try to keep things from God, deceive Him with lies, and run away from Him are foolish!

"Boastful," one of the meanings of the name *Irad*, describes the act of making something appear greater than what it actually is. It refers to the exaggeration of one's current wealth, appearance, power, or honor in order to impress others and satisfy oneself. When Nebuchadnezzar, king of Babylon, surveyed the grandeur of his kingdom and boasted of his power and glory, a voice came from heaven even before he had finished speaking. Immediately, King Nebuchadnezzar degenerated to the level of animals in accordance with the prophecy of the voice (Dan 4:28–37).

God declared that the kingdom of Judah would come to ruin because King Hezekiah did not speak of God's grace but only boasted of his own strength and power to Berodach-baladan, the king of Babylon (2 Kgs 20:16–19; Isa 39:6–7).

When God is not present in people's hearts, they try to fill the void by adorning themselves with power, honor, and fame. They use the power of money, knowledge, and authority to oppress the weak and the poor. For this reason, the Bible advises not to "boast in your arrogance" for "all such boasting is evil" (Jas 4:16). The only boasting that we should do is of Jesus Christ (Gal 6:14).

4. Mehujael (מְחוּיָאֵל): blotted out by God[14]

The name of Irad's son, *Mehujael*, means "blotted out clean by God" (Gen 4:18). The name *Mehujael* is a combination of the root words מחה (*māhâ*), meaning "to blot" or "to wipe out," and אֵל (*ʾēl*), meaning "God." Consequently, the name can be interpreted as "the one whom God wiped out" or "the one whose name God blotted out." This is a truly frightful curse. A name attests to a person's existence, and blotting it out voids that person's existence altogether. This is truly the harshest judgment.

What kind of life did Mehujael live that he should receive such a cursed name? Although the Bible makes no mention of his deeds or his character, we can make inferences about his life based on other uses of the Hebrew word *māḥâ* in the Bible.

The word *māḥâ*, the root of *mehu*, was used to describe the act of using a sponge or fabric to absorb and wipe away ink spots from a scroll. Just as an ink spot is wiped away from a scroll, when an individual's name, his achievements, or even an entire nation is wiped away, that is a sure sign of a fearful judgment. Consequently, this word was mainly used in connection with the punishment and judgment of criminals. The word *māḥâ* is used to mean "to blot out" in Genesis 6:7, "And the Lord said, 'I will blot out man whom I have created from the face of the land,'" and in Genesis 7:23, "Thus He blotted out every living thing that was upon the face of the land." This word is used many times throughout the Bible with two different meanings.

First, *māḥâ* signifies the complete destruction of a city or tribe that has sinned before God. Here, the word literally means "to remove" and "to make extinct." In the verse, "I will wipe Jerusalem as one wipes a dish" in 2 Kings 21:13, the word *wipe* (*māḥâ*) connotes God's judgment upon the city.

In a discussion regarding the way to save the tribe of Benjamin, "that a tribe may not be blotted out from Israel" (Judg 21:17), *māḥâ* is rendered as "to blot out" or "to make disappear." The word is used in connection with judgment upon a city or tribe resulting in destruction so utterly complete that it will be wiped out even from people's memories.

Second, the word is used to refer to the blotting out of a person's name or the memory of that person's existence. A good example is the account of the Amalekites. In Exodus 17:14, God said, "I will utterly blot out the memory of Amalek from under heaven," and in Deuteronomy 9:14, "Let Me alone, that I may destroy them and blot out their name from under heaven." Here, *nāḥâ* signifies the act of blotting out from a person's memory. The Amalekites had attacked the faint and weary stragglers at the end of the Israelites' wilderness procession (Deut 25:18; 1 Sam 15:2). God remembered what they had done and commanded the sons of Israel to blot out the name of Amalek from their memory.

These two examples demonstrate how the word *nāḥâ* was used to describe God's judgment upon nations, tribes, cities, and individuals that stood against His will and committed sin. We can infer from the name *Mehujael* that he had lived his life similar to how the Amalekites, who endlessly challenged God and afflicted His people and like the people before the flood who were wicked and violent in their purpose.

5. Methushael (מְתוּשָׁאֵל): **man of Sheol or man of God**[15]

The name of Mehujael's son, *Methushael* (Gen 4:18), has two suggested meanings that contradict one another.

First, *Methushael* can be rendered as a compound word (name) made up of מַת ; (*mat*), which means "man," and שְׁאוֹל (*šĕʾôl*), which means "Sheol" or "hell," thus giving the meaning "man of hell." In the Old Testament, "Sheol" usually refers to the grave, hell, or the world of the dead. This implies that Methushael did not walk with God, but that he lived his life seeking to satisfy his worldly greed and personal desires and ultimately fell into Sheol, the world of the dead.

Second, *Methushael* can be rendered as a compound word made up of *mat*, God's name *)* *ʾēl*, and *ša* (*sa*), meaning "of," and thus means "man of God."

It can be presumed that Mehujael gave his son a name that means "man of God." Knowing that his own name means "to blot out" and that everything he had achieved in his life had disappeared altogether in fulfillment of the meaning of his name, he had probably wished for a different life for his son. Perhaps he had hoped that his son would become a man of God, guided by His hand into a life of peace and blessings.

Unfortunately, judging from the fact that Lamech, Methushael's son, became a more wicked murderer than did Cain (Gen 4:23–24), Methushael must have lived as a man of hell and not as a man of God.

Like the two meanings of the name *Methushael*, all human beings walk one of the two paths of life. Some live as people of God and follow His will; they are used for His glory, to perform His great and honorable work. What a glorious honor it is for helpless human beings to be called "people of God," belong to Him, and be used by Him! Moses (Deut 33:1), Samuel (1 Sam 9:8), Elijah (1 Kgs 17:18), Elisha (2 Kgs 4:7; 5:8), King David (Neh 12:24), and other unnamed prophets (1 Sam 2:27; 1 Kgs 13:1) were called "men of God." Paul also called Timothy "man of God" (1 Tim 6:11).

Others live their lives enslaved by Satan and confined in darkness as children of hell. Jude 11–13 describes the lives of people such as Cain, Balaam, and Korah, who stood against God, as "wandering stars, for whom the black darkness has been reserved forever." The "black darkness" refers to hell.

There are always two opposing paths laid out before all people. Moses spoke the words of God, saying, "See, I have set before you today life and prosperity, and death and adversity" (Deut 30:15). He continues, "I have set before you life and death, the blessing and the curse," and then he instructs the people, "So choose life in order that you may live, you and your descendants" (Deut 30:19). We must choose life. We must love God and obey His Word (Deut 30:20). Then our lives will take shape as lives

of the people of God, and the meaning "man of Sheol" will not apply to us.

6. Lamech (לֶמֶךְ): a strong youth,[16] the conqueror[17]

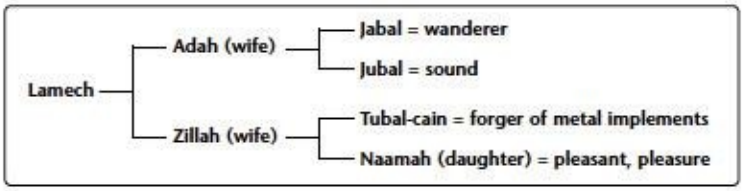
The Bible furnishes most details for the account of Lamech, the last of Cain's six descendants (Gen 4:19–24). Sin advanced down the line of Cain after the fall and reached its peak with the last generation, Lamech, who yielded the fruit of darkness and wickedness in abundance.

The Hebrew derivation of the name *Lamech* (or *Lamek*) is uncertain. In Arabic, it means "strong youth" or "oppressor." Theologian John P. Lange interprets it as "strong youth."[18] The meaning of the name suggests arrogance and boasting of one's own strength.

Those who are incomparably stronger and more powerful freely practice violence against the weak and try to overpower and control them. Furthermore, they become intoxicated with their own heroism and drift far away from God.

(1) Lamech defiled God's ordained principle of holy matrimony, turning it into a fleshly and hedonistic practice.

Lamech was a lustful man who took for himself two wives and became the first polygamist. Genesis 4:19 states, "And Lamech took to himself two wives." The table below shows the sons who were born to Lamech through the two women.



① Adah was Lamech's first wife.

The name *Adah* means "adorn," "decorate," or "glow," suggesting outward attractiveness and seductiveness rather than inner beauty. Presumably, she was a superficial woman who delighted in her own beauty. She probably invested a great deal of time in adorning herself with fancy clothing, cosmetics, and jewelry in order to seduce men.

② Zillah was Lamech's second wife.

The name *Zillah* means "shade" or "shadow"[19] (possibly implying shady places of sin). It also means "protection" (perhaps alluding to her desire to be protected by any man). The name can also mean "to tinkle," an allusion to the sweet sound of the female voice.[20] She was most likely a lewd woman who whispered flattery into her husband's ears and encouraged him to perform even more evil deeds.

Even after having committed murder, Lamech returned home without any sense of guilt and boasted of his strength before his wives. With the weapon still in his hand, he sang a song about his gruesome act.

> Genesis 4:23–24 And Lamech said to his wives, "Adah and Zillah, listen to my voice, you wives of Lamech, give heed to my speech, for I have killed a man for wounding me; and a boy for striking me; [24]if Cain is avenged sevenfold, then Lamech seventy-sevenfold."

Rather than admonishing their husband for his evil deeds, Lamech's wives most likely praised and applauded him as he told stories about how he had killed with his sword. Zillah probably sang along with her husband, luring him with the "tinkling" sounds of her voice. Both wives no doubt spent all of their time and energy adorning themselves to please him.

(2) Lamech misused the name of God and indulged in the act of retaliation without feeling any guilt.

Lamech sang in his poem, "If Cain is avenged [by God] sevenfold, then Lamech seventy-sevenfold" (Gen 4:24). He sang that God would avenge him as He had avenged Cain, but in actuality Lamech avenged himself. The Bible states, however, that vengeance belongs to God (Deut 32:35; Rom 12:19; Heb 10:30).

In addition, Lamech turned God's special favor and mercy toward Cain into divine protection for murderers. He turned the law of compassion into a law of retribution. In Cain's case, God prevented others from taking revenge against him, but Lamech took revenge into his own hands. This was an infringement upon God's sovereign authority.

In Lamech's poem about his killing, he misused the name of God Almighty and openly declared that he would take vengeance and kill anyone without mercy. This surely was a flagrant display of man's arrogance and a blasphemous outburst against God.

(3) Lamech disdained the value of life and humanity.

Lamech boasts in Genesis 4:23, ". . . for I have killed a man for wounding me; and a boy for striking me."

The term *to wound* is פָּצַע (*pāṣaʿ*) in Hebrew, and it refers to a light bruise, not a life-threatening injury. Lamech refused to restrain his anger though the wound was light, and mercilessly destroyed a precious life in order to display his strength and power to others. His actions unfortunately reflected the developing spirit of his age: the exaltation of oneself and the degradation of human life even though human life should have been held in high esteem because it holds the image of God.

(4) Lamech passed down to his children a civilization founded upon strife and murder.

For the descendants of Cain, the purpose of education was far removed from any desire for restoration in the fields of intellectuality, humanity, or spirituality. They developed their civilization for the purpose of expanding the influence of humanism, and their opposition to God grew stronger with the passage of time.

① Lamech had Jabal and Jubal through Adah, his first wife.

> Genesis 4:20–21 And Adah gave birth to Jabal; he was the father of those who dwell in tents and have livestock. [21]And his brother's name was Jubal; he was the father of all those who play the lyre and pipe.

The name *Jabal* means "to lead," "to carry," or "to flow" (searching for wet places).[21] He became the father of those who "dwell in tents and have livestock." The word *livestock* here is מִקְנֶה (*miqneh*), and it refers to flocks or herds of animals used for mercantile purposes. Jabal was the first nomad to migrate from place to place dwelling in tents and may have been the first livestock trader. He was not, however, the first to raise herds; Abel was also a "keeper of flocks" (Gen 4:2).

The name *Jubal* means "sound" or "music." He became the father of all who played the lyre and pipe. Unfortunately, their instruments were not used to praise and worship God. Their music produced sounds of debauchery and licentiousness. The Hebrew word for *pipe*, עוּגָב (*ʿûgāb*), is derived from the verb עָגַב (*ʿāgab*), which means "to fall into sensual love." Thus, it is certain that Jubal's music was designed not for praising God, but rather for sensual pleasure and entertainment.

② Lamech had Tubal-cain and Naamah through Zillah, his second wife.

> Genesis 4:22 As for Zillah, she also gave birth to Tubal-cain, the forger of all implements of bronze and iron; and the sister of Tubal-cain was Naamah.

Tubal-cain became a forger of all kinds of sharp implements and tools of bronze and iron. He was a blacksmith. The name *Tubal-cain* (תּוּבַל קָיִן) is a compound word made up of תּוּבַל (*tûbal*) and קַיִן (*qayîn*). The word *tubal* derives its meaning from Arabic roots: "to overflow," "to multiply" (breed), or "to run." Combined with *Cain*, the name reveals Lamech's desire for the future prosperity of the Cainite descendants. The attachment of the name *Cain* (the father of this sinful lineage) in the name of Tubal-cain suggests that the sinfulness flowing through the lineage was most prominent during his time. Tubal-cain smelted and sharpened implements of metal. These implements were used not as farming or peacemaking tools, but as killing weapons by his father, Lamech.

Lamech's daughter, Naamah, was born of his second wife Zillah (Gen 4:22) and was Tubal-cain's sister. Her name means "pleasant," "sweet," or "beauty (exceptional)." Naamah must have been a seductive woman who was adept at arousing sexual desires. Traditionally, women's names are excluded from the list of descendants. Naamah's name was recorded in this genealogy probably because she was extraordinary in her sensual beauty, pleasure, and lust, but not because she was godly in any way.

(5) Lamech deified (heroized) himself.

Metal implements aided Lamech's massacre campaign and led to the birth of "heroes" during his time. Naturally, a great band of servile followers formed, eventually building enormous strength and challenging God. This was the evil product of the advancement of human civilization.

The development of human civilization was geared toward humanism, hedonism, and sexual corruption. The underlying philosophy was that the development of individual power should allow them to become supernatural beings similar to God. This is an example of Satan at work, tempting people always to disregard God, rebel against Him, and try to gain independence from Him.

Lamech had reached a point where he no longer feared God's wrath. Adam's sin was in disobeying God's command. Cain's sin was in rejecting the Word and manifesting his wickedness through murder. Lamech's sin was in normalizing the act of murder and heightening the spirit of revenge. The readiness to shed blood, which first manifested in Cain, reappeared in an intensified form in Lamech. The ungodliness of the Cainite lineage had reached its peak with Lamech.

CHAPTER 9

The Descendants of Sin in the Line of Cain

The descendants of Cain reached their apex in Lamech's time as civilization flourished and developed, but the genealogy comes to a sudden halt with no further accounts of Cain's descendants after Lamech, the seventh generation. On the other hand, the genealogy of Seth continued down through Noah, Abraham, David, and all the way to the Messiah.

This is not to say that all the descendants of Cain perished during Lamech's time. Cain's lineage undoubtedly continued through Lamech's three sons, most likely forming a great nation. The Bible, however, discontinues the genealogy of Cain as a warning to readers that civilization and life can come to a sudden halt even at its peak, regardless of how developed and flourishing they may be, if they continue without God.

The Bible testifies that Cain's fleshly genealogy does not stop with Lamech. Rather, Cain's sinfulness will continue down through the lives of different people until the end time. The genealogies that continue down through Nimrod (a descendant of Ham who led the people to build the Tower of Babel), Ishmael, and Esau are prominent examples.

1. The Descendants of Nimrod (נִמְרוֹד) and the Construction of the Tower of Babel

The descendants of Cain in Genesis 4 were pioneers of human civilization. Lamech's three sons became fathers of those who engaged in livestock trading, played musical instruments, and made metal implements. Nimrod became a mighty hunter and warrior on the earth comparable to Cain and Lamech (Gen 10:8–9).

(1) Nimrod, the mighty one on earth

Genesis 10 describes Nimrod as the first mighty one on the earth, a mighty hunter before the Lord, and the father of Babel. It mentions the genealogy of Ham and continues down to Nimrod, but pauses to offer a detailed account of his works to highlight his significance.

First, Nimrod was a "mighty one." The term *mighty one* is defined in the Hebrew lexicon as "hero," "vigorous man," or "influential man." It is also interpreted as "one who is distinguished in valiance, ability, and wisdom to the extent of achieving a great work." Although Nimrod was called a mighty one on the earth, he was not a hero in God's sight because he was brave in challenging God and skillful at standing against His will. He possessed singular ability and wisdom for plundering souls through deception.

The term *mighty one* is גִּבּוֹר (*gibbôr*) in Hebrew and generally means "one who rules with violence" or "a tyrant." Nimrod was a tyrant who oppressed people and opposed God. He conquered tribes through violence and challenged God by instigating people to build the Tower of Babel.

Second, Nimrod was a "mighty hunter." This description speaks of his work and relationship with God. "Mighty hunter" implies that he was a distinctively more skillful hunter than others. The region where Nimrod dwelt was a fertile land inhabited by numerous beasts of the field (Exod 23:29–30; Deut 7:22). Henry Morris comments, "The reference to Nimrod's hunting prowess suggests that wild beasts were thought to be a real source of danger at the time and that Nimrod acquired his heroic reputation by protecting the population against these beasts."[22] It was through this that Nimrod apparently gained servile

followers and rose to the position of a heroic leader in his time. His power increased as the number of his followers multiplied, and he used this power to deify himself. He sat in God's place and opposed Him. He flaunted his ability to entice and reign over people's souls. Nimrod was a type of the antichrist, robbing the souls of mankind and turning them away from God:

> Genesis 10:8–9 Cush was also the ancestor of Nimrod, who was the first heroic warrior on earth. [9]Since he was the greatest hunter in the world, his name became proverbial. People would say, "This man is like Nimrod, the greatest hunter in the world." (New Living Translation)

Third, Nimrod became the founder of Babel (Gen 10:10; 11:4), the atheistic city-state that challenged God's will, through his followers' support. Similar in character to that of the Cainite descendants, the nation of Babel exalted the names of men rather than God's. Nimrod mobilized the people to the plains of Shinar for the purpose of building the Tower of Babel so that he might achieve his great objective.

(2) Constructing the Tower of Babel

Under Nimrod's leadership, the people's desire to build the Tower of Babel originated from their ambition to establish a self-sufficient civilization independent from God. The Bible speaks of three purposes for the construction of the Tower of Babel.

The first purpose was to build for themselves a city and a tower whose top would reach into heaven (Gen 11:4). This tower was a *ziggurat*, a structure in the form of a terraced pyramid with successively receding stories. At the center of the *ziggurat* were steps to the top, where a small temple or shrine was built. In the ancient world, building a high religious structure to reach the heavens was in pursuit of unity, combining human strength to build a great empire. The desire to build a safe and strong nation independent from God was manifested in the construction of the Tower of Babel.

This incident occurred not too long after the catastrophic flood that destroyed the entire world. Thus, the construction of the Tower of Babel was an expression of the people's discontentment with God's judgment. They disregarded God's covenant of the rainbow—the promise that He would never again judge the world with water (universal flood [Gen 9:8–17])—and seemed to prepare for God's judgment. How foolish and arrogant it is for men to reject God's protection and seek their own through the means of human strength and power! This act is reminiscent of how Cain had disregarded God's sign of protection and built a city for his own protection, naming it after his own son Enoch (Gen 4:15–17). The root of this kind of evil is the devil's power.

The situation is similar today not only in the secular world, but also within the church. There are forces of darkness that seek to unify human strength by emphasizing one heart and one will rather than focusing on the Word of God. Unity outside of the Word of God and gatherings that do not acknowledge faith in God will only lead to conflicts, hurt feelings, a sense of futility, and regret. Furthermore, unified powers apart from God and gatherings for the purpose of human comfort and convenience are not only lawless, unrighteous, and wicked, but are also in opposition to God's plan for redemption.

The second purpose for building the Tower of Babel was to make for themselves a name (Gen 11:4). Like the descendants of Cain, they sought after their own honor and exaltation rather than the glory of God's name. They used the power of science and civilization to challenge God's authority and reached the peak of humanistic arrogance: the desire to become like God (Isa 14:12–14). However, God destroyed their haughty plans by confusing their language and scattering them throughout the face of the whole earth (Gen 11:7–8).

Adam and Eve were deceived by the serpent's words in the Garden of Eden: "For God knows that in the day you eat from it your eyes will be opened, and you will be like God, knowing good and evil" (Gen

3:5). They ate from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil in their proud desire to become like God and were expelled from Eden (Gen 3:23–24). James 4:6 tells us, “God is opposed to the proud.”

The third purpose for building the Tower of Babel was to avoid being scattered abroad over the face of the whole earth (Gen 11:4). This was an act of defiance against God’s command upon creation. After God created man, the first command He gave to Adam was to “Be fruitful and multiply, and fill the earth, and subdue it” (Gen 1:28). God also gave the same blessing to Noah and his sons after the flood: “Be fruitful and multiply, and fill the earth” (Gen 9:1, 7). This command reveals God’s intent to spread His children throughout the whole world so that they may prosper and turn the entire world into a kingdom of God’s people. However, Nimrod gathered his followers to build the Tower of Babel in order to prevent people from being scattered throughout the face of the whole earth. All this was evil in the eyes of God, and He destroyed all of their intentions.

> Genesis 11:8–9 The Lord scattered them abroad from there over the face of the whole earth; and they stopped building the city. 9Therefore its name was called Babel, because there the Lord confused the language of the whole earth, and from there the Lord scattered them abroad over the face of the whole earth.

God used the confusion of languages as a means to discontinue the construction of the tower and scatter the people. Language is more than mere sounds that come from the mouth. Unity in language signifies unity in philosophy and lifestyle. Therefore, the confusion of languages not only leads to differences in philosophy, but also causes chaos in all aspects of life. It brought the construction to an immediate end, demonstrating that man’s achievements can come to a sudden halt even after careful planning, great investment, and detailed coordination. The prophet Isaiah declared God’s Word to such foolish people: “Surely My hand founded the earth, and My right hand spread out the heavens; when I call to them, they stand together” (Isa 48:13). In 1 Samuel 2:6–10, Hannah, who was barren, gave birth to Samuel by the grace of God. After the birth of Samuel, she realized that all things are part of God’s sovereign providence and praised Him, saying, “Those who contend with the Lord will be shattered; against them He will thunder in the heavens” (1 Sam 2:10).

This world, powerful and ambitious, is quick to unite for the purpose of carrying out evil schemes. We must examine our lives to see if our plans, ways, and goals are human-centered like the plans of those who built the Tower of Babel. In His sovereign providence God called us for His good purpose. Paul encourages, “Therefore, walk in a manner worthy of the calling with which you have been called” (Eph 4:1). Those who are called according to His purpose will work together for good in order to fulfill what God has planned (Rom 8:28). The times are calling for people of faith who will conduct themselves in “a manner worthy of the gospel of Christ” so they may be pleasing to God (Phil 1:27).

2. Ishmael (יִשְׁמָעֵאל) and Esau (עֵשָׂו)

The history of the wicked civilization of the descendants of Cain ended after Lamech, but manifested itself again with the attempt to build the Tower of Babel. It was unsuccessful because God scattered the people, but the history of the line of Cain did not stop there. It continued again through Ishmael, Abraham’s son.

(1) Ishmael, a wild donkey of a man

The Bible states that Abraham’s son Ishmael, born of Hagar the maid, would live the life of a “wild donkey.” The angel of the Lord spoke of Ishmael in Genesis 16:12, “And he will be a wild donkey of a man, his hand will be against everyone, and everyone’s hand will be against him; and he will live to the east of all his brothers.” This suggests that the children of Ishmael and of Abraham’s promised son Isaac will be in competition and confrontation.

His dwelling place will be “to the east.” The literal translation of “to the east” is “before the face of.”

According to the Revised Standard Version translation, he will dwell "over against" his kinsmen. Hence, the statement that he will live "to the east" of all his brothers implies that he would become an offspring of sin and wickedness like Nimrod, and stand against God and afflict His people. Just as Nimrod became a mighty hunter and reigned over people who opposed God, Ishmael became like a wild donkey that violently afflicted God's people.

From the verse, "His hand will be against everyone, and everyone's hand will be against him" we can infer that he was the kind of person who stirred up dissension and instigated unnecessary fights wherever he went. He continuously raised his hands to strike God's people and to challenge God's will. Ishmael's entire life was filled with hostility and animosity toward others. In the end, how pitiful his life would be if "everyone" turns against him (Jer 17:6)!

Ishmael had already begun to be against others from a young age when he mocked his own brother Isaac (Gen 21:9). Furthermore, he associated himself with Nimrod when he took a wife from the land of Egypt (Gen 21:21). In Genesis 10:6, Cush, Mizraim, Put, and Canaan were born to Ham, Noah's son. Mizraim became the father of the Egyptians. Cush became a father of Nimrod. Thus, by marrying an Egyptian, Ishmael drew closer to Nimrod's line.

(2) Esau, father of the Edomite tribe

Esau, the father of the Edomites, was one of Isaac's twin sons. He ultimately lost his position to receive in God's covenantal blessings because he took the privileges of his birthright lightly by selling it to his brother Jacob (Gen 25:29–34; Heb 12:16–17). Esau took wives for himself, including Adah the daughter of Elon the Hittite, Oholibamah the daughter of Anah from Canaan, and Basemath the daughter of Ishmael (Gen 36:2–3). Through these marriages he simultaneously linked himself with the line of Canaan—the son of Ham—and the line of Ishmael. Thus, the ungodly descendants of Cain not only shared a common philosophy and lifestyle, but also became a part of each other's bloodline through marriage. They united in the effort to stand against God's will and continue on the path of disbelief.

One of the most notable persons among the descendants of Esau was Amalek (Gen 36:12). Amalek was born to Eliphaz, Esau's son, through his concubine Timna. Later in history, the descendants of Amalek attacked the children of Abraham in Rephidim as they journeyed through the wilderness after their exodus from Egypt. Their attack on the chosen people incited God's great anger. As a result, He vowed to wage war against Amalek from generation to generation (Exod 17:16) and commanded Israel to blot out the memory of Amalek from under heaven (Deut 25:17–19). The Amalekites, however, continued to afflict the people of Israel, even by allying themselves with neighboring countries to attack Israel (Obad 1, 2, 10, 18).

There was also a time when Israel came close to being destroyed because of Haman the son of Hammedatha the Agagite (Esth 3:1–15). However, they were miraculously saved from destruction through Queen Esther's sacrificial faith. The Bible introduces Haman as an Agagite, revealing that he was a descendant of Esau (Esth 3:1, 10; 8:5; 9:24). In 1 Samuel 15:8, Agag is described as "the king of the Amalekites"—evidence that Agag was an Amalekite and thus a descendant of Esau. Therefore, Haman was also a descendant of Esau.

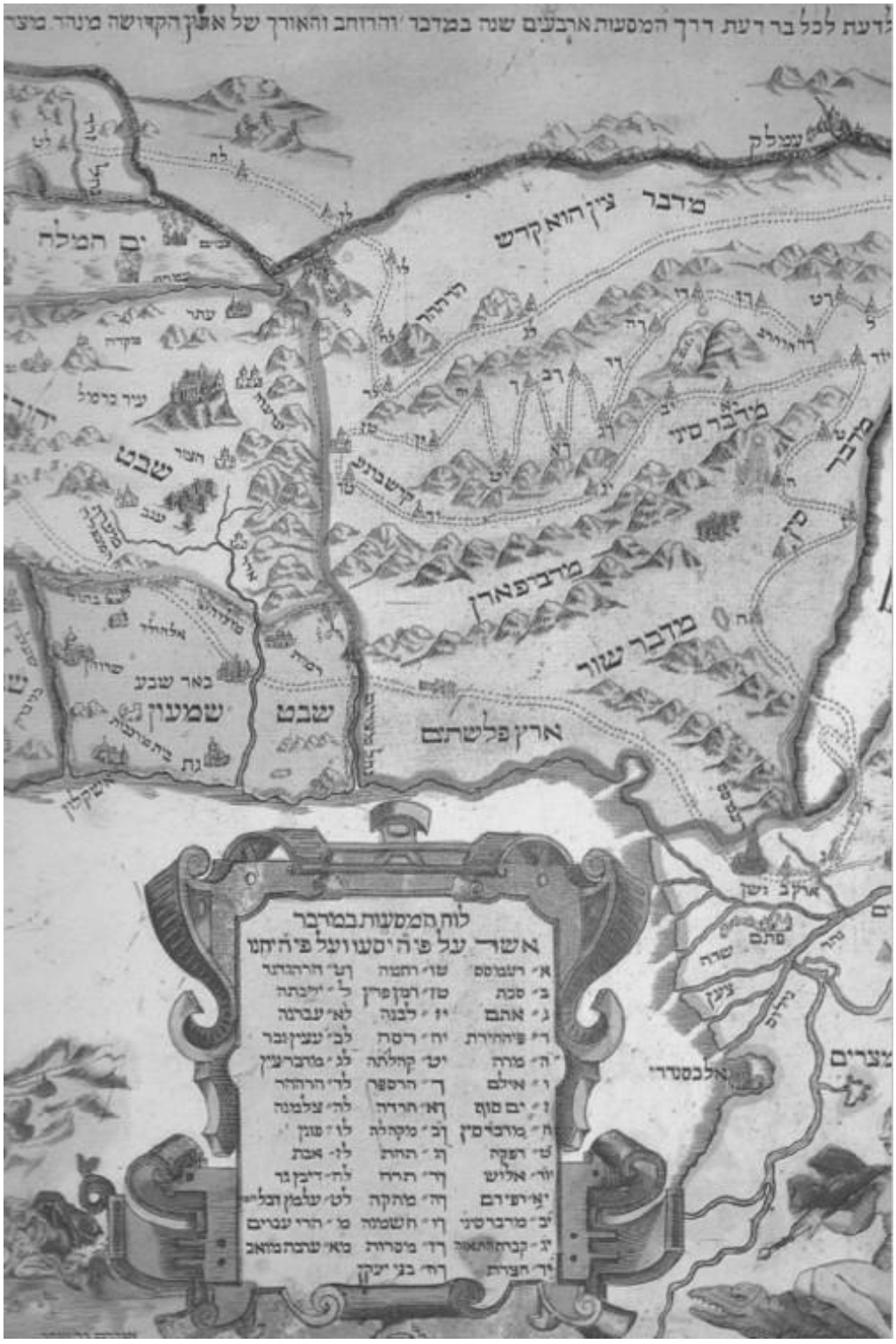
All of the people who followed in the way of Cain afflicted God's covenantal children and tried to hinder His work of redemption just as Nimrod, Ishmael, and Esau had done (Jude 1:11). Their deeds of darkness will not cease until the day that the work of redemption is complete. Cain's disbelief was inherited by Nimrod and the people of Babel and continued through Ishmael and Esau. In the Book of Revelation, these descendants of Cain are altogether called "Babylon" (Rev 17:5; 18:2).

The name Babylon has a connotation of the inability to protect one's faith and resist the temptation to partake in the abominable deeds of the great harlot and the world. People who have the characteristics of

Babylon depend on the civilization that they have built and stand against the will of God. In the end, these people will be split into three parts and will fall (Rev 16:19). The genealogies of the unfaithful teach an important lesson: plans that begin without God and oppose Him will collapse even at the height of their success. The genealogy of Cain was suddenly cut off during Lamech's generation, and the construction of the Tower of Babel came to an abrupt halt. The Bible testifies that the great city Babylon will also be "fallen, fallen" in the end (Rev 14:8; 18:2).

This was God's sovereign providence and His way of working toward achieving salvation for His chosen people. The line of Cain became a force that attempted to interfere with God's work of redemption and will continue to resist until the end (1 John 3:12). Although the sinfulness of the line of Cain was great, God's sovereign will was even greater and more fervent. His divine administration for salvation will carry on until the day Satan's head is crushed and made a footstool for God's feet (Ps 110:1; Luke 20:43; Acts 2:35; Heb 1:13; 10:13).

Even as the tides of sin and wickedness swell over the earth, God's work of redemption will continue on like a great and undaunted waterway of life that resuscitates the dying ocean. Our current world, completely decorated with all kinds of sin, is evidence that the final segment of the history of redemption is quickly approaching. It is time to prepare the spiritual oil for our lamps (Matt 25:1–13; 24:44). It is now time to wake up from slumber (Luke 21:36; Rom 13:11). The final fulfillment of God's work of redemption is closer now than at any other time. It is important for all to prepare diligently in faith and invest all efforts in achieving godliness and living lives with no regrets (2 Cor 13:5; 1 Tim 4:7–8; 2 Pet 1:5–8).


לדעת לכל בר דעת דרך המסעות ארבעים שנה במדבר והרוחב והאורך של ארץ הקדושה מנהר מצר
ים המלח
מדבר צין הוא קדש
עמלק
שבט
מדבר סיני
מדבר פארן
מדבר שור
ארץ פלשתים
באר שבע
שמעון
שבט
לוח המסעות במדבר
אשר על פי ה׳ יסעו ועל פי ה׳ יחנו
א׳ רעמסס שו׳ רחמה וט׳ הרהגדגד
ב׳ סכת טז׳ רמן פרץ ל׳ יקבתה
ג׳ אתם יז׳ לבנה לא׳ עברנה
ד׳ פיהחירת יח׳ רסה לב׳ עצין זבר
ה׳ מרה יט׳ קהלתה לג׳ מדבר צין
ו׳ אילם ך׳ הרספר לד׳ הרהדה
ז׳ ים סוף וא׳ חרדה לה׳ צלמנה
ח׳ מדבר סין וב׳ מקהלת לו׳ פונן
ט׳ דפקה וג׳ תחת לז׳ אבת
יו׳ אלוש וד׳ תרח לח׳ דיבן גד
יא׳ רפידם וה׳ מתקה לט׳ עלמן דבלתי
יב׳ מדבר סיני וו׳ חשמנה מ׳ הרי עברים
יג׳ קברת התאוה וז׳ מסרות מא׳ ערבת מואב
יד׳ חצרת וח׳ בני יעקן
מצרים
אלכסנדרי

PART FOUR

The Genealogy According to the Line of Seth

Genesis 4 sums up the genealogy of those who have forsaken God, and Genesis 5 introduces a new genealogy of faith that begins with Seth. The emergence of the line of Seth in a world stained by Cain's unbelief and cruel act of murder meant renewed hope and a new beginning for all mankind. There are 20 generations in the genealogy of Seth: ten generations from Adam to Noah and another ten immediately following Noah, from Shem to Abraham.

First, God's administration for the coming of the Messiah flows through this genealogy.

Second, this genealogy introduces Noah (the tenth generation from Adam) and Abraham (the tenth generation from Shem). These two central figures in the history of redemption are the presages of the Savior who would come to save mankind from judgment.

Third, this genealogy presents a model of proper faith for believers who place their hope in the Second Coming. The God who worked through these 20 patriarchs is also working through us today.

This chapter will introduce the 20 patriarchs through the study of their names, the historical background of their times, and description of their lives of worship and godly faith. In addition, we will examine how God's plan for the redemption of mankind continuously flows through the core of this genealogy.

Excursus 2

The Twenty Generations of the Patriarchs

(❋ The chronology of the patriarchs and the correlation of their years organized and presented for the first time in history)

1st אָדָם Ἀδάμ Adam	① Adam became the father of Seth at the age of 130. ② He lived 800 years and had other children. He died at the age of 930 (Gen 5:3–5). ③ Adam lived 56 years contemporaneously with Lamech, his ninth generation.
2nd שֵׁת Σήθ Seth	① Seth was born 130 years after Adam. ② He became the father of Enosh at the age of 105. He lived 807 more years and had other children. He died at the age of 912 (1,042 years after Adam [Gen 5:6–8]). ③ He lived 800 years contemporaneously with Adam.
3rd אֱנוֹשׁ Ἐνώς Enosh	① Enosh was born 235 years after Adam. ② He became the father of Kenan at the age of 90. He lived 815 more years and had other children. He died at the age of 905 (1,140 years after Adam [Gen 5:9–11]). ③ He lived 695 years contemporaneously with Adam.
4th קֵינָן Καϊνάμ Kenan	① Kenan was born 325 years after Adam. ② He became the father of Mahalalel at the age of 70. He lived 840 more years and had other children. He died at the age of 910 (1,235 years after Adam [Gen 5:12–14]). ③ He lived 605 years contemporaneously with Adam.
5th מַהֲלַלְאֵל Μαλελεήλ Mahalalel	① Mahalalel was born 395 years after Adam. ② He became the father of Jared at the age of 65. He lived 830 more years and had other children. He died at the age of 895 (1,290 years after Adam [Gen 5:15–17]). ③ He lived 535 years contemporaneously with Adam.
6th יֶרֶד Ἰάρετ Jared	① Jared was born 460 years after Adam. ② He became the father of Enoch at the age of 162. He lived 800 more years and had other children. He died at the age of 962 (1,422 years after Adam [Gen 5:18–20]). ③ He lived 470 years contemporaneously with Adam.

7th חֲנוֹךְ Ἐνώχ **Enoch**	① Enoch was born 622 years after Adam. ② He became the father of Methuselah at the age of 65. He walked with God for 300 years and had other children. Then, he was transfigured and taken up to heaven without seeing death at the age of 365 (987 years after Adam [Gen 5:21–24; Heb 11:5–6; Jude 1:14–15]). ③ He lived 308 years contemporaneously with Adam.
8th מְתוּשֶׁלַח Μαθουσαλά **Methuselah**	① Methuselah was born 687 years after Adam. ② He became the father of Lamech at the age of 187. He lived 782 more years and had other children. He died at the age of 969 (1,656 years after Adam [Gen 5:25–27]). ③ He lived 243 years contemporaneously with Adam.
9th לֶמֶךְ Λάμεχ **Lamech**	① Lamech was born 874 years after Adam. ② He became the father of Noah at the age of 182. He lived 595 more years and had other children. He died at the age of 777 (1,651 years after Adam [Gen 5:28–31]). ③ He lived 56 years contemporaneously with Adam.
10th נֹחַ Νώε **Noah**	① Noah was born 1,056 years after Adam. ② He became the father of Shem at the age of 502, and the flood began when he was 600 years old. He lived 350 years after the flood and died at the age of 950 (2,006 years after Adam [Gen 5:32; 9:28–29]). Noah did not have more children after the flood. ③ Noah was born 126 years after Adam's death, so the two men did not meet. He lived 58 years contemporaneously with Abraham. ④ The flood occurred 726 years after Adam's death. ⑤ Revelation regarding the flood and instructions for the ark were given after Noah's three sons were married (after Noah was 500 years old [Gen 5:32; 6:10–18]). ⑥ Revelation regarding the date of the flood: 1,656 years after Adam (when Noah was 600 years old), 10th day of the 2nd month. ⑦ Date of the flood = 1,656 years after Adam (when Noah was 600 years old). 17th day of the 2nd month (Gen 7:4, 6–12).
11th שֵׁם Σήμ **Shem**	① Shem was born 1,558 years after Adam (before the flood, when Noah was 502 years old). ② He became the father of Arpachshad at the age of 100 (2 years after the flood). He lived 500 more years and had other children. He died at the age of 600 (2,158 years after Adam [Gen 11:10–11]). ③ Shem lived 448 years contemporaneously with Noah, his father. ④ Shem lived 35 years more after Abraham's death, until Isaac was 110 years old and Jacob was 50 years old. ⑤ Shem experienced the flood at the age of 98 and lived a long life, until he was 600 years of age. He had witnessed the world before the flood, after the flood, and even the judgment of Babel. He lived contemporaneously with 15 generations of patriarchs, from Methuselah (the 8th) to Jacob (the 22nd), including himself.

12th אַרְפַּכְשַׁד Ἀρφαξάδ **Arpachshad**	① Arpachshad was born 1,658 years after Adam. ② He became the father of Shelah at the age of 35. He lived 403 more years and had other children. He died at the age of 438 (2,096 years after Adam [Gen 11:12–13]). ③ He lived 348 years contemporaneously with Noah. ④ He lived until Abraham was 148 years old and Isaac was 48 years old.
13th שֶׁלַח Σαλά **Shelah**	① Shelah was born 1,693 years after Adam. ② He became the father of Eber at the age of 30. He lived 403 more years and had other children. He died at the age of 433 (2,126 years after Adam [Gen 11:14–15]). ③ He lived 313 years contemporaneously with Noah. ④ Shelah outlived Abraham by 3 years, until Isaac was 78 years old and Jacob was 18 years old.
14th עֵבֶר Ἔβερ **Eber**	① Eber was born 1,723 years after Adam. ② He became the father of Peleg at the age of 34. He lived 430 more years and had other children. He died at the age of 464 (2,187 years after Adam [Gen 11:16–17]). ③ He lived 283 years contemporaneously with Noah. ④ Eber outlived Abraham by 64 years, until Isaac was 139 years old and Jacob was 79 years old.
15th פֶּלֶג Φάλεκ **Peleg**	① Peleg was born 1,757 years after Adam. ② He became the father of Reu at the age of 30. He lived 209 more years and had other children. He died at the age of 239 (1,996 years after Adam [Gen 11:18–19]). ③ Man's life span was shortened to about half after Eber. Thus, Peleg was the first one to die among the 10 generations after the flood. ④ He lived 239 years contemporaneously with Noah.
16th רְעוּ Ῥαγαύ **Reu**	① Reu was born 1,787 years after Adam. ② He became the father of Serug at the age of 32. He lived 207 more years and had other children. He died at the age of 239 (2,026 years after Adam [Gen 11:20–21]). ③ He lived 219 years contemporaneously with Noah.
17th שְׂרוּג Σερούχ **Serug**	① Serug was born 1,819 years after Adam. ② He became the father of Nahor at the age of 30. He lived 200 more years and had other children. He died at the age of 230 (2,049 years after Adam [Gen 11:22–23]). ③ He lived 187 years contemporaneously with Noah.
18th נָחוֹר Ναχώρ **Nahor**	① Nahor was born 1,849 years after Adam. ② He became the father of Terah at the age of 29. He lived 119 more years and had other children. He died at the age of 148 (1,997 years after Adam [Gen 11:24–25]). He lived the shortest life among all 20 generations of patriarchs. ③ He lived 148 years contemporaneously with Noah.

19th תֶּרַח Θάρα **Terah**	① Terah was born 1,878 years after Adam. ② He became the father of Abram at the age of 70. He lived 135 more years and had other children. He died at the age of 205 (2,083 years after Adam [Gen 11:26–32]). ③ He lived 128 years contemporaneously with Noah. ④ Although Shem (11th), Shelah (13th), and Eber (14th) outlived Abraham (20th), his father, Terah (19th), died 40 years before Abraham.
20th אַבְרָהָם Ἀβραάμ **Abraham**	① Abraham was born 1,948 years after Adam. ② He became the father of Isaac, the covenantal son, at the age of 100. He died at the age of 175 (2,123 years after Adam [Gen 17:1–22; 21:5; 25:7]). ③ He lived 58 years contemporaneously with Noah. ④ Within the 10 generations after Noah: – Patriarchs who died before Abraham: Arpachshad, Peleg, Reu, Serug, Nahor, Terah. – Patriarchs who died after Abraham's death: Shem (outlived him by 35 years), Shelah (outlived him by 3 years), and Eber (outlived him by 64 years).

Contemporaneous Years

This chart uses the expressions, “He lived [number of] years contemporaneously with Adam” for the prediluvian (before the fl ood) patriarchs and, “He lived [number of] years contemporaneously with

Noah" for the postdiluvian (after the fl ood) patriarchs. This suggests that there may have been correspondence between the patriarchs, although they may not have lived in the same region or dwelling place.

It is important to note that Adam and Noah (the former had experienced the world before and after sin while the latter had lived through the overtures leading to the flood and the actual fl ood itself) were living in the same time period as their direct descendants. This leads us to infer that these two ancestors had great infl uence on the faith of their descendants. Adam lived contemporaneously with Lamech until he was 56 years old, and Noah lived contemporaneously with Abraham until he was 58 years old.

CHAPTER 10

The Genealogy from Adam to Noah

The cycle consisting of the fall of man, judgment, and restoration is repeated twice in the genealogy from Adam to Noah. The first cycle begins with Adam's sin and banishment from the Garden of Eden and Cain's act of murder and Abel's death. It concludes with the recovery from sin and judgment through Seth. In the second cycle, God judges with the flood the world that was overflowing with sins committed by the sons of God and the daughters of men, but He esteems Noah and establishes him as the second ancestor of mankind to begin a new history.

Lamech, from the line of Cain, was an important figure whose deeds were recorded in greater detail than others in his line. Likewise, Enoch (the seventh generation from Adam) was the focus of attention from the line of Seth. Enoch lived 308 years contemporaneously with Adam and believed in Adam's testimony of the Word of God. As a result, he became the first man to walk with God and overcome death.

In the genealogy from Adam to Noah there are no additional narratives for the lives of Kenan, Mahalalel, Jared, and Methuselah. Nevertheless, their longevity testifies of their godly lives of faith. Countless passages in the Old and New Testaments emphasize that longevity is God's special blessing bestowed upon those who live godly lives (Deut 4:40; 5:16; 6:2; 11:9; 12:25, 28; 22:7; Exod 20:12; 1 Kgs 3:14; Ps 21:4; 55:23; 91:16; Prov 3:1–2, 7–8, 16; 4:20–23; 9:11; 10:27; 16:31; Eccl 7:17; 8:13; Eph 6:1–3). Proverbs 3:1–2 states, "My son, do not forget my teaching, but let your heart keep my commandments; for length of days and years of life, and peace they will add to you." The lives of the wicked, however, will be reduced in half (Ps 55:23).

All the patriarchs from Adam to Noah enjoyed astonishing longevity. Excluding Enoch, who was taken up to heaven without seeing death at the age of 365, the years of the other nine patriarchs in the order of longevity were as follows: Methuselah (969), Jared (962), Noah (950), Adam (930), Seth (912), Kenan (910), Enosh (905), Mahalalel (895), and Lamech (777). Seven patriarchs lived to be over 900 years in age—longevity impossible to achieve today. Despite the inevitability of death resulting from sin, longevity was a special privilege awarded to the godly offspring and the greatest blessing for men on earth. Eui-Won Kim observes that the blessing of longevity was God's special blessing given to the descendants of Seth, but not to the descendants of Cain.23 Yune-Sun Park also notes that there is a close relationship between godliness and longevity. He interprets longevity as the result of God's plan, and also as the result of special reverence for God in each generation.24

We will now proceed to examine the unique structure of the genealogy recorded in Genesis 5—the lives of the ten patriarchs and the spiritual meaning hidden in their names—in order to understand God's sovereign plan and providence.

1. First Generation: Adam

אָדָם (*ʾādām*): man, mankind, human

Adam became the father of Seth at the age of 130. He lived 800 more years and had other children. He died at the age of 930 (Gen 5:3–5; 1 Chr 1:1).

His name is recorded in the genealogy of Jesus in Luke 3:38 as Ἀδάμ (*Adam*).

The name Adam comes from the Assyrian root *adamu*, meaning “to make” or “to create.” Man can never be the creator; he is only the creation and the creature. Adam was formed from the dust (Gen 2:7; 3:19, 23). The term *dust* is עָפָר (*ʿāpār*) in Hebrew, meaning “dust” or “ashes,” not “mud” or “dirt.” Without the breath of God, the essence of man is only dust (Gen 18:27; Job 4:19; 33:6; Ps 103:14; Eccl 3:20; Isa 64:8; 1 Cor 15:47).

(1) Adam lived until Lamech, the ninth generation, was 56 years old.

✻ Organized and presented for the first time in history

After the fall, Adam and Eve probably testified about their blessed lives before the fall, their fellowship with God, and the conditions in Eden. All the generations from Seth (second generation) to Lamech (ninth generation) probably received a full account from Adam about the eternal world before the fall, their spiritual experiences, Satan’s deception, the consequences of disobedience, and the promise of salvation.

Adam received the assured gospel regarding the woman’s seed (Gen 3:15) and no doubt preached this gospel to his descendants with tireless diligence because it was the only ray of hope for him and for all mankind. More than anyone else, Adam believed that the woman’s seed would come according to the promise that he received. This is evident in the name he gave to his wife after they had received the promise in Genesis 3:15: Eve (“life” [Gen 3:20]). Through this name, Adam declared that Eve would become the mother of all the living. This was the first confession of faith in the promise of the seed and the expression of hope of that day when life conquers death. His conviction most likely strengthened each time he called out her name.

The garments of skin with which God had clothed Adam and Eve before banishing them from Eden (Gen 3:21) were the assurance of His covenant in Genesis 3:15, which for Adam was more precious than life itself. The garments made of skin imply that sacrifice is the basic principle of salvation. It also reveals how the redemption of mankind would be accomplished. This is a foreshadowing of Jesus Christ’s sacrifice on the cross, for the sacrifice of life is required to make garments of skin.

Throughout his life, Adam cherished the garments of skin because they were his confirmation of the covenant. He firmly believed that the day would come when the promised seed would bruise the head of the serpent. This presumably is the faith that he taught and passed down to his descendants.

(2) Adam testified of the glorious experiences in the Garden of Eden

① Adam probably taught his descendants that the Garden of Eden was a world without shame, for they were naked but were not ashamed.

Genesis 2:25 And the man and his wife were both naked and were not ashamed.

After the fall, however, as soon as their eyes were opened to sin, they saw their nakedness and used fig leaves as makeshift clothing and hid themselves (Gen 3:7). In Genesis 3:10, Adam says, “I heard the sound of Thee in the garden, and I was afraid because I was naked; so I hid myself.” Their sense of shame brought fear and led them to hide from God’s face.

Adam not only vividly experienced this shame and fear, but also clearly understood the causes. He probably engraved into the hearts of his descendants descriptions of the world of Eden where there was no shame. With God’s glory, peace, and love overflowing, there was no fault, guilt, or condemnation. How would Adam ever forget such a world?

② Adam probably told them about the days when he heard the voice of God and conversed with Him as

He walked through the garden (Gen 2:15–16; 3:9, 10, 11, 17).

The Garden of Eden was a garden of happiness and blessings because it was where they heard God's tender voice and conversed with Him (Ps 36:8). After they sinned, however, the same gentle voice caused fear and anguish. When God asked, "Adam, where are you?" he could not answer, "Here I am," as he had previously done. Instead, he hid among the trees from the face of God, and ultimately he was banished from Eden (Gen 3:23). It is likely that Adam testified of God to his descendants without ceasing and with zealous longing for the restoration of Eden where he had once enjoyed indescribable joy and happiness through fellowship with God.

③ Adam probably told them about how he named all creation with the wisdom God bestowed upon him.

> Genesis 2:19 And out of the ground the Lord God formed every beast of the field and every bird of the sky, and brought them to the man to see what he would call them; and whatever the man called a living creature, that was its name.

Created in God's own image, Adam possessed great wisdom and creativity. It is simply impossible to name thousands and millions of different creatures and living things with human wisdom; it is possible only when God's Spirit is working within. This wisdom is like the wisdom that God bestowed on Solomon, who "spoke of trees, from the cedar that is in Lebanon even to the hyssop that grows on the wall … also of animals and birds and creeping things and fish" (1 Kgs 4:32–34).

Adam must have genuinely enjoyed his sovereign power over all creation as he named them. This wisdom, however, vanished along with his authority and power over God's creation when he sinned. He was degraded to a being who could hardly sustain himself. Adam most likely shared these experiences with his descendants as well.

(3) Adam died at the age of 930, fifty-seven years before Enoch was taken up to heaven.

Calculation:
987 years after Adam (Enoch's transfiguration)
– 930 years (Adam's age at death)
= 57 years

Adam lived contemporaneously with Enoch for 308 years, but he was not able to witness Enoch's ascension because he died 57 years before Enoch was taken up. Enoch did not walk with God during the first 65 years of his life before his son, Methuselah, was born. He started walking with God at the age of 65 after Methuselah was born, and continued to walk with Him for 300 years until the age of 365 (Gen 5:21–24). Thus, Adam witnessed Enoch's walk with God for 243 years. Adam presumably exerted great influence on Enoch's life through his testimonies about life before and after his sin and banishment from Eden.

Adam lived 930 years and died. Genesis 5:5 states, "So all the days that Adam lived were nine hundred and thirty years, and he died." The Hebrew word for *die* is מוּת (*mut*), and it refers to natural death. This is the Bible's first reference to natural death since the account of the murder of Abel. The word מוּת (*mut*), is first recorded in the Bible in Genesis 2:17. In this verse, God sternly warns Adam, saying, "But from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil you shall not eat, for in the day that you eat from it you shall surely die." This warning became reality through Adam's death.

The fact that God destroyed the life of Adam, into whom He Himself had breathed the breath of life, demonstrates the extent of His wrath toward sin. Adam's death was truly tragic because it marks the beginning of death, which all his descendants would ultimately inherit (Rom 5:12).

However, life was propagated through Adam's descendants even after his death. This is expressed through the phrases "he begot," "he had," "he became the father of," and "after he became the father of,"

which in Hebrew is יָלַד (*yālad*). This word appears 28 times in Genesis 5. God's long journey toward the redemption of life began when sin brought the curse of death upon all men. God did not abandon man after his tragic failure and fall; rather, He transformed death into life through His abounding grace and love.

2. Second Generation: Seth

שֵׁת (*šēt*): substitute,25 granted,26 appointed one,27 foundation or grounds[28]

> Seth was born 130 years after Adam. He became the father of Enosh at the age of 105. He lived 807 more years and had other children. He died at the age of 912 (1,042 years after Adam [Gen 5:6–8; 1 Chr 1:1]). He lived 800 years contemporaneously with Adam and witnessed Enoch's ascension at the age of 857.
>
> His name is recorded in the genealogy of Jesus in Luke 3:38 as Σήθ (*Sēth*).

Adam's second son was Abel (Gen 4:2). In Hebrew, the name *Abel* is הֶבֶל, (*hebel*) and means "vain," "emptiness," and "breath (vapor)." This is a foreboding of the abrupt end that his life would encounter. It is a natural parental inclination to give good names to one's children, but Adam named his second son *Abel*, hinting at his realization of the vanity and futility of man's existence as a result of sin.

Adam and Eve's first son, Cain, belonged to the evil one; he killed his brother Abel and shattered their hopes for a new life. Furthermore, Cain departed from God's presence and left Adam and Eve grieving (Gen 4:16). Cain abandoned the path of faith not long after he killed Abel, so they had essentially lost both sons at once. When Jacob heard that his most beloved son, Joseph, had died, he mourned for him for a long time, refusing to be comforted by his other children. He lamented, "Surely I will go down to Sheol in mourning for my son" (Gen 37:34–35). Jacob's great sorrow is similar to the grief that Adam and Eve experienced after losing both sons.

As immense sorrow and despair enveloped Adam's family, God brought comfort and hope by promising "another seed" in Abel's place. Seth, the son born to Adam at the age of 130, was truly an expression of God's abounding grace and a gift of overflowing hope and comfort.

The name Seth is derived from שִׁית (*šit*), which means "to put" and "to set." Abel's life was true to the meaning of his name. Unable to fill his years, he disappeared like a fog without ever receiving the chance to become deeply rooted. Thus, the hope was for God's work to be reestablished and deeply rooted through Seth.

(1) Seth was a son in Adam's image and likeness.

Adam had a son in his own image and likeness.

> Genesis 5:3 When Adam had lived one hundred and thirty years, he became the father of a son in his own likeness, according to his image, and named him Seth.

This verse is the declaration that God's image was being passed down through the line of Seth. Seth, not Cain, was the son bearing the image of his father, Adam, and God's promise was given to the line of Seth, not to the line of Cain. This demonstrates that the life and the image of God given to Adam, though not in their original perfect form because of Adam's sin, were inherited by Seth. The dignity and the value of human beings distinguish them from beasts because they are created in God's own image (Gen 9:6; Jas 3:9). Though it may not have been in its original perfect form, the image of God continued to be passed on

through fallen mankind.

(2) Seth was "another seed" that God granted (Gen 4:25).

As the descendants of Cain continued to corrupt the world through murder and deception, Adam realized that God had granted him "another seed" as a part of His redemptive purpose. In response, he gave thanks to God and named his son *Seth*. It is apparent from this name that Adam desired and firmly believed that the path of the promised Savior would be opened up through the line of Seth.

After being plagued by chaos, painful tears, and sorrow, Adam's family was now being reestablished through Seth. This is clearly an indication of God's determination to bring forth the woman's seed, even if it required granting "another seed." His providence for salvation continued on and on until Jesus Christ was born through Mary. Jesus was not of the seed of Joseph; He was "another seed" conceived by the Holy Spirit (Matt 1:18–20). Truly, God's plan is too great for man to comprehend and too immense to measure.

(3) Seth's name contained the hope of securing the path for the coming of the Messiah.

Besides the meaning "another seed," Seth's name also means "to place" and "foundation." In terms of redemptive history, this expresses the hope that Seth, who inherited the image of God, would firmly establish the path for the promised Messiah.

A true church established upon the Word of Jesus Christ, the rock, will neither collapse nor be overcome by the power of darkness (Matt 16:18, 7:24–27). The churches of the end time will also stand firmly upon the foundation of Jesus Christ, who came from the line of Seth.

(4) Seth witnessed Adam's death and Enoch's ascension later.

Chronologically, Seth died 112 years after Adam's death and 55 years after he witnessed Enoch's ascension. Noah (Adam's tenth generation), a type of the Savior, was born 14 years after Seth's death.

Calculation: Year of Seth's death (1,042 years after Adam)
– Year of Adam's death (930)
= 112 years
Year of Seth's death (1,042 years after Adam)
– Year of Enoch's ascension (987)
= 55 years
Year of Noah's birth (1,056 years after Adam)
– Year of Seth's death (1,042)
= 14 years

3. Third Generation: Enosh

אֱנוֹשׁ (*ʾĕnôš*): man, mortal frailty[29]

Enosh was born to Seth at the age of 105 (Gen 5:6; 1 Chr 1:1), which was 235 years after Adam. Enosh became the father of Kenan at the age of 90. He lived 815 more years and had other children. He died at the age of 905 (1,140 years after Adam [Gen 5:9–11]). He lived 695 years contemporaneously with Adam and 84 years with Noah. He witnessed Enoch's ascension at the age of 752.

His name is recorded in the genealogy of Jesus in Luke 3:38 as Ἐνώς (*Enōs*).

The name Enosh is derived from אָנַשׁ (*ʾănash*), which means "incurable" and "very sick." Enosh, like

Adam, can be used either as a proper name or as a common noun for "man."30 The name communicates man's total helplessness and predetermined frailty. It likens the state of sinful man to the condition of one groaning in sickness and affliction from an incurable illness (Jer 15:18; Mic 1:9). Enosh's father, Seth, recognized that man, without seeking God, was too frail to overcome the temptations of sin that violently swept over the world. The name Enosh was a confession of faith from the mouth of Seth, who began to call upon the name of God. Through the name *Enosh*, we can better understand the developing spirit of the times.

(1) People began to call on the name of the Lord (Jehovah) during Enosh's time.

The Bible states that around the time Seth named his son Enosh, men began to call upon the name of the Lord (Jehovah).

> Genesis 4:26 And to Seth, to him also a son was born; and he called his name Enosh. Then men began to call upon the name of the Lord.

The phrase, "call upon the name of the Lord" underscores the fact that people began to develop a personal relationship with God. Even in human relationships, addressing someone by name rather than by title indicates having a closer, more familiar relations. The Bible connects the significant act of men calling upon the name of the Lord directly to the matter of salvation.

> Acts 2:21 And it shall be, that everyone who calls on the name of the Lord shall be saved.
> Romans 10:13 For "Whoever will call upon the name of the Lord will be saved."

The fact that men began to call upon the name of the Lord implies that a proactive relationship between God and men had begun. The word "call" (קָרָא, *qārā'*) used here means "to proclaim" and "to cry out." It signifies that the name of Jehovah had been proclaimed even in the far regions. Thus, we can infer that the practice of true worship was well established during Enosh's time, becoming the foundation upon which the gospel began to be preached to many people.

(2) Proper worship and development of faith in God began during Enosh's time.

The statement in Genesis 4:26 that men began to call upon the name of the Lord indicates that formal worship had begun. The New Living Translation of Genesis 4:26 renders it as an act of worship: "When Seth grew up, he had a son and named him Enosh. At that time people first began to worship the Lord by name." However, this worship is not the first offering of sacrifices in the 235 years after the fall of Adam. Seeing that Cain and Abel offered sacrifices to God, we can understand that the people had begun offering sacrifices long before. Thus, the phrase, "men began to call upon the name of the Lord," refers to formal worship services of holiness and faith. Theologians concur that the fundamental philosophy and attitude of worship that call for the presence of God was established during the time of Enosh. It was an expression of people's desire to surrender their will in order to fully commit to God's sovereign rule. At the same time, it was a dire cry to God for deliverance from a pervasively sinful world.

Whereas the descendants of Cain were arrogant and relied on their own strength in all aspects of life, the godly descendants of Seth stood humbly before God, confessing their need for Him, and established a life of worship and fellowship with Him.

(3) Enosh represents mankind, who is frail and unable to attain salvation on its own.

When we acknowledge that we are frail beings (like the meaning of Enosh) unable to escape death, we can properly present ourselves as a living and holy sacrifice acceptable to God. This is true spiritual worship (Rom 12:1). Furthermore, we receive the gift of salvation when we call upon the name of the Lord with a heart of true worship (Acts 2:21; Rom 10:13).

The apostle Paul cried out, “Wretched man that I am!” (Rom 7:24). Realizing that he was a weak being (like Enosh) who cannot overcome death by his own strength, he confessed, “For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus has set you free from the law of sin and of death” (Rom 8:1–2). Furthermore, Paul heard the voice of God telling him, “My grace is sufficient for you, for power is perfected in weakness,” and he rejoiced in his own weakness, saying, “Most gladly, therefore, I will rather boast about my weaknesses” (2 Cor 12:9). He was able to make this confession because he came to understand the profound truth that the power of Christ dwells in those who call upon the name of the Lord in their weakness.

As the meaning of the name Enosh (“weak man”) points out, human beings are weak, powerless before sin, and easily susceptible to temptation; they are destined to die in sin. Hence, people who lived during Enosh’s time wholeheartedly confessed that they were helpless beings overpowered by the burden of sin and death. They devoted their hearts and souls to worshiping God and calling upon His name. There is an earnest call today for people who sincerely anticipate God’s eternal reign to confess that they are like Enosh (i.e., weak) and revive true worship.

4. Fourth Generation: Kenan

קֵינָן (*qēnān*): a child, one begotten,[31] possession[32]

> **Kenan was the son born to Enosh at the age of 90 (1 Chr 1:1–2). He was born 325 years after Adam. He became the father of Mahalalel at the age of 70. He lived 840 more years and had other children. He died at the age of 910 (1,235 years after Adam [Gen 5:12–14]). He lived 605 years contemporaneously with Adam and 179 years with Noah. He witnessed Enoch’s ascension at the age of 662.**
>
> **His name is recorded in the genealogy of Jesus in Luke 3:37 as Καϊνάν (*Kainan*).**

The name *Kenan* is קֵינָן (*qēnān*) in Hebrew and shares the same root as קֵן (*qēn*), which means “nest,” and קָנַן which means “to make a nest.” The descendants of Seth realized their weakness and powerlessness and began a movement to revive their faith by calling upon the name of the Lord in true repentance. However, Kenan’s name suggests that it was during his time that the people finally built a nest of faith.

(1) Kenan means “mercy unexpectedly found.”

Kenan probably was an unexpected gift from God, a son of great joy born through His providence. God had mercy on us and gave a great gift called Jesus Christ. Why is Jesus Christ an unexpected gift for mankind?

First, the love and grace of salvation are unexpected gifts in that they are too great, too high, and too deep for man to fathom. However, it is a gift that is granted to anyone and a great joy to those who receive it.

Second, it is unexpected because salvation is granted without merit; it is granted entirely by grace and not due to any virtue or friendship. It is truly a gift of joy, a gift of glory, and the greatest possible gift that mankind could ever receive.

> Ephesians 2:8–9 For by grace you have been saved through faith; and that not of yourselves, it is the gift of God; [9]not as a result of works, that no one should boast.

Mary’s conception of Jesus Christ through the Holy Spirit is also an unexpected gift. The conception of

Jesus Christ was the foremost and greatest blessing for Mary.

> Luke 1:28–30 And coming in, he said to her, "Hail, favored one! The Lord is with you." [29]But she was greatly troubled at this statement, and kept pondering what kind of salutation this might be. [30]And the angel said to her, "Do not be afraid, Mary; for you have found favor with God."

The unexpected news about Jesus Christ's birth was "good news of a great joy" to the shepherds who were tending their sheep at night (Luke 2:10).

Jesus came in the fullness of time (Gal 4:4), and was an unexpected gift and the true gospel to hopeless sinners (John 1:14, 16; 3:16; Rom 5:15; 2 Cor 9:15).

(2) Kenan means "vast possession."

It seems that Enosh hoped to enlarge the borders of faith and further recover the lost sovereignty, which man had in Eden, through his unexpectedly begotten son Kenan. The meaning of Kenan's name, "vast possession," hints at the hope of recovering the lost work of creation (Matt 4:9; Luke 4:5–7), the lost dominion over the creation, and the lost sovereignty (Gen 1:28; 2:15, 19). From the perspective of redemptive history, the name *Kenan* foreshadows Jesus, who would bring the good news to the earth, save all mankind, and completely restore all creation.

It is quite possible, from their confessions, that the descendants of Seth had expanded their spiritual territory through greater faith in the awesome God, the Lord and Creator of the vast universe.

Today, we must obey the commands to "subdue the earth" (Gen 1:28) and to "make disciples of all the nations" (Matt 28:18–20) by conquering this world with the gospel and turning it into God's vast possession.

5. Fifth Generation: Mahalalel

מַהֲלַלְאֵל (*mahălalēl*): praise of God,33 God be praised, glory to God

Mahalalel was the son born to Kenan at the age of 70 (Gen 5:12; 1 Chr 1:2). He was born 395 years after Adam. He became the father of Jared at the age of 65. He lived 830 more years and had other children. He died at the age of 895 (1,290 years after Adam [Gen 5:15–17]). Mahalalel lived contemporaneously with Adam for 535 years and with Noah for 234 years. He witnessed Enoch's ascension at the age of 592.

His name is recorded in the genealogy of Jesus in Luke 3:37 as Μαλελεήλ (*Maleleēl*).

The name Mahalalel is a compound word made up of a Hebrew noun that means "praise" (מַהֲלָל, *māhălāl*), which originates from the verb *to praise* (הָלַל, *hālal*), and the name of God אֵל (*ʾēl*). Together, it means "praise to God" or "praise of God."

To praise is to sing of God's wonderful virtues using lyrics and music. It is the greatest form of exaltation for the wonders of nature and the greatness of people. Only God, who governs all history, is worthy to receive true praise and worship (Rev 5:12; 19:1–5).

Praising God is emphasized through this name, suggesting that the people of that time had grown close to God through spiritual revival and growth in faith. The act of formal worship that started at the time of Enosh evolved into a nest of holy believers during the time of Kenan. Congregational worship during the time of Mahalalel developed further into worship filled with praises in which God may dwell and be glorified (Ps 22:3).

(1) Only God is worthy to be praised (Rev 5:12).
It is the creatures' rightful duty to praise God for who He is (Ps 79:13; 105:1–4; Isa 43:7, 21; Eph 1:6, 12, 14). Singing praises is exalting God through music. The psalmist sings, "Let everything that has breath praise the Lord. Praise the Lord!" (Ps 150:6). Here, the phrase "praise the Lord" is a rendering of the Hebrew expression "Hallelujah." Augustine said that a hymn is a song which praises God. Further, he defines a true hymn as the act of "singing to the praise of God."34 Like the meaning of the name Mahalalel, we must also glorify God by living our lives to the praise of God.

(2) Praise is a force that unleashes God's power.
The sound of powerful praises brought down the wall of Jericho (Josh 6:16–20), drove out the evil spirit in Saul (1 Sam 16:23), and caused a violent earthquake that opened the prison gates and unfastened the chains (Acts 16:25–26). Battles were always victorious when people singing God's praises marched before the army (2 Chr 20:20–23). These amazing works were possible because God is enthroned upon praises (Ps 22:3).

After King Solomon completed the construction of the temple, God's presence was upon the temple when a choir clothed in fine linen praised the Lord with cymbals, harps, and lyres, along with 120 priests blowing trumpets (2 Chr 5:12). God manifested His presence when they praised Him in unison with singing and music (2 Chr 5:13). The cloud of God's glory filled the temple so that the priests could not minister because of it (2 Chr 5:14). Thus, praise is the holy aroma that draws God closer and displays His powerful and amazing works unimaginable for man.

(3) Praise is an inspired confession of grace received.
The godly descendants of Seth engaged in fierce, ongoing, spiritual battles against sin and wickedness and saw that God's help resulted in victory (Deut 1:30; 20:4; Josh 10:14, 42; 23:1; Neh 4:20). Kenan must have named his son Mahalalel as a confession of the grace that he had received in order to glorify God and testify before many people that God is alive. Those who have experienced God's grace cannot help but sing praises and testify of His grace (John 1:41; Acts 9:22; 18:5, 28).

The name Judah, one of the 12 tribes of Israel, means "praise the Lord" (Gen 29:35). The tribe of Judah stood at the forefront of every battle and always returned victorious (Judg 1:1–10; 20:18). From the perspective of redemption history, Mahalalel is a type of the Messiah, who was to come from the tribe of Judah to save all mankind through the cross, obtain victory through the resurrection, and be enthroned in praises (Ps 78:68–70; Heb 7:14; Rev 5:5). Truly, only the Lord Jesus deserves our worship of praise, for He came and granted salvation to sinful mankind, helplessly frail and deserving of death.

6. Sixth Generation: Jared

יֶרֶד (*yered*): descent or descendant,35 to go or come down (from a higher place)36

> Jared was the son born to Mahalalel at the age of 65 (Gen 5:15; 1 Chr 1:2). He was born 460 years after Adam. He became the father of Enoch at the age of 162. He lived 800 more years and had other children. He died at the age of 962 (1,422 years after Adam [Gen 5:18–20]). He lived 470 years contemporaneously with Adam and 366 years with Noah. He witnessed Enoch's ascension at the age of 527.
>
> His name is recorded in the genealogy of Jesus in Luke 3:37 as Ἰάρεδ (*Iared*).

The name Jared originates from the Hebrew word יָרַד (*yārad*), which means "to carry down," "to

transport," or "to put down."

This is an indication that the spiritual movement to praise God had not been limited to a few, but rather was widespread among the people at that time. It also suggests that the practice of worship had been successfully passed down through the generations. The meaning of the name Jared hints to the hope that God, who is worthy to be praised upon the foundation of faith laid by Enoch, Kenan, and Mahalalel, would come down to this world and save them. There was simply no way for mankind, who cannot even break free from the cycle of sickness and death associated with this world, to restore the lost paradise. The people of that time realized that they could not neutralize the serpent's lethal venom by their own strength.

Their sincere longing for the woman's seed (Gen 3:15) is also evident from the alternative meaning of the name *Jared*: "descendant." As the fulfillment of this hope, Jesus Christ, the Word incarnate, came into this world and dwelt among the people (John 1:14).

(1) Jared lived longer than the preceding patriarchs.

Jared lived 962 years and thus lived the longest among the patriarchs from Adam to Jared. He lived 32 years longer than Adam did. Only his grandson, Methuselah, lived longer than Jared by seven years and set the record for longevity with 969 years. Thus, Jared lived the second-longest life in primeval history. Longevity was a special privilege and the greatest blessing on this earth which the godly descendants received from God.

Regarding Jared, Chul-Won Suh states in his exegesis of Genesis, "He received this blessing because he was godly. He had entrusted everything to God and educated his children well so that they were righteous and evil did not thrive among them."[37]

Those who perhaps do not share the same beliefs in God's blessing of longevity assert a negative interpretation of the name's origin. They believe that the meaning of the name, "to go down" or "to descend," suggests that Jared had fallen into sin. However, their argument is unconvincing in light of the fact that Jared was blessed with the longest life among the first five generations in the line of Seth and the second-longest in primeval history.

(2) Jesus Christ humbled Himself and came down in the lowest and humblest form (Phil 2:6–8).

Similar to the meaning of the name Jared, Jesus rejected the glory of His throne in heaven and came down to this lowly world (John 3:13; 6:41). From the moment of his birth, Jesus was laid in a manger surrounded by the smell of animal excrement (Luke 2:7). He grew up in a poor carpenter's family (Matt 13:55; Mark 6:3) and was looked down upon even by His own brothers (John 7:5). Religious leaders treated Him with contempt because He had not received a proper education (John 7:15). He came unto His own people, but had to spend 33 years of His life in sorrow because they did not receive Him (John 1:11).

Nevertheless, Jesus, the Son of Man who descended from heaven (John 3:13), completely obeyed the command of the Father who had sent Him (John 8:42; 16:28). Throughout His life, He sought to glorify the Father (John 7:18), praying in tears and working to fulfill the will of the Father (Luke 22:42). He did only what was pleasing to the Father (John 8:29). He spoke what the Father taught Him and acted according to what the Father showed Him (John 5:19; 7:16; 8:28, 38; 12:49). He considered the Father's command as eternal life (John 12:50) and was obedient even to the point of death on the cross (Phil 2:8). This is why God was always with Jesus—"Immanuel" (John 8:29).

Let us examine ourselves to see if we are bearing the fruit of obedience to the Father's will and sincerely repent so that we may also meet with God, Immanuel.

(3) Enoch was Jared's fruit of faith.

As the meaning of his name suggests, Jared lowered himself before God and always lived with humility.

This is also apparent in the name of his son Enoch. The name *Enoch* means "dedicated" or "offered," hinting that Jared had wanted to completely dedicate his son to God. Enoch later fulfilled his father Jared's cherished desire of faith: he reached the peak of godly faith of overcoming death and ascending into heaven. Enoch was truly Jared's fruit of faith.

Moreover, by just looking at the meaning of the name "Enoch," one can see what kind of devoted faith his father Jared had. One cannot possibly name his child "dedicated" before God if he himself were not dedicated in faith. Just as Hannah had offered Samuel to God's temple (1 Sam 1:22), and as Abraham had offered Isaac to God on a mount in Moriah (Gen 22:2), so, too, did Jared offer his son to God because he had realized that his son ultimately belonged to Him even though he was God's gift (Ps 127:3). He acknowledged that the ownership of his son belonged totally to God, and he wished for his son to be used according to His will.

Jared had accurately sensed the corruption of his time. In his desire to set the standard for righteousness and truth, he dedicated his son to God. Jared was mature in faith; he sought after God instead of shifting blame for the social decay of the times. He joyfully consecrated his son apart from the sinful world and willingly offered him to God so that he might live as a public figure dedicated to the nation and to the times.

7. Seventh Generation: Enoch

חֲנוֹךְ (*ḥănôk*): dedicated (offered),38 begin or initiated,39 teacher

Enoch was the son born to Jared at the age of 162 (Gen 5:18; 1 Chr 1:2–3). He was born 622 years after Adam. He became the father of Methuselah at the age of 65 and walked with God for 300 years, had other children, and ascended to heaven without seeing death at the age of 365 (987 years after Adam [Gen 5:21–24; Heb 11:5–6; Jude 14–15]). He lived 308 years contemporaneously with Adam. Noah was born 69 years after Enoch's ascension, so the two men did not meet.

1,056 years after Adam (Noah's birth)
– 987 years after Adam (Enoch's ascension)
= 69 years

His name is recorded in the genealogy of Jesus in Luke 3:37 as Ἑνώχ (*Henōch*).

In Hebrew, the name Enoch is חֲנוֹךְ (*ḥănôk*). It is the noun form of the verb meaning "to offer," and the most common rendering is "offered" and "dedicated one." The root of this name is חָנַךְ (*ḥānak*), which means "to inspire" or "to teach." Thus, the noun form would be rendered as "teacher." It appears that Jared named his son "dedicated (offered)" out of the desire to fully dedicate his son to God as the first fruit of his godly life. Enoch presumably lived out God's teachings in his life and deeply inspired many people. As presaged by the meaning of his name, Enoch was a foreshadow of Jesus Christ, the Lamb who was fully dedicated before God to die on the cross as an atoning sacrifice for the sins of mankind (John 1:29; 1 Cor 5:7).

Until Enoch, every genealogy concluded with the inevitable phrase "and he died," as though it were natural. The phrase, "and he died," appears eight times in Genesis 5 (Gen 5:5, 8, 11, 14, 17, 20, 27, 31). However, there was one person whom death could not conquer: Enoch, the seventh generation from Adam. He was like the morning star shining brightly in the dark night sky. He walked with God and attained eternal life without seeing death; his life and ascension demonstrated the height of godly life. Truly, the unseen mystery of overcoming death, which heretofore had not been witnessed, was the greatest of all blessings.

There is only one record of Enoch's deeds on this earth (Jude 1:14–15). He prophesied about God's judgment against "ungodly deeds" and "ungodly speech" prevalent during his time. Enoch lived up to his father's expectations by dedicating his life to God as a true prophet of his age.

(1) Enoch was a teacher who taught an important lesson to all mankind.

Besides the meaning "dedicated" or "offered," Enoch's name also means "successor," "beginning," and "teacher." The following conclusions can be drawn regarding Enoch's ministry from the perspective of redemptive history:

① Enoch received God's trust by walking with Him and pleasing Him (Heb 11:5).

② Enoch was the first to teach mankind that whoever walks with God in faith will obtain eternal life (Gen 5:21–24). He taught that there was a way to reach heaven without seeing death: transfiguration and ascension into heaven.

(2) Enoch walked with God and was taken up by God.

God did not wait until Enoch's death to take him to heaven. In Hebrew, to take is לָקַח (*lāqaḥ*), and its usage here connotes the act of "snatching (taking) away" from death to a place different from this world (the kingdom of God). This signifies that God had transfigured Enoch into spiritual form and took him up to heaven without allowing him to experience death (Heb 11:5). Elijah was the other person in the Bible who was transfigured. He was taken up to heaven by a whirlwind, and the word לָקַח (*lāqaḥ*) was also used in his case (2 Kgs 2:10–11). The word לָקַח (*lāqaḥ*) teaches us that death, an impassable obstacle for man, kneels before the power of God Almighty.

What enabled Enoch to be transfigured into a heavenly form? Genesis 5:24 explains that Enoch was taken because he walked with God. The Hebrew word for walk in Genesis 5:24 is יִתְהַלֵּךְ (*yithallēk*), the reflexive form of the verb הָלַךְ (*hālak*), and means "to subject oneself and follow." According to this meaning, walking with God means more than just traveling together with Him; it refers to taking each step in accordance with His will without having different thoughts. Ultimately, walking with God is to become one with God, so that the two may appear as one.

There was no change of heart for Enoch during his 300-year walk with God. He willingly and joyfully followed God and embraced His will in his heart; this is what pleased God and compelled Him to grant Enoch the glory of ascension to heaven without seeing death (Heb 11:5). We, too, can be liberated from the reign of death over our lives if we hold God's hand and wholly walk with Him.

Before we ask the question, "Would it be possible for me to be transfigured now without seeing death?" we must ask ourselves, "Am I truly walking with God?" The Hebrew word הָלַךְ (*hālak*), for *walk* also appears in Deuteronomy 30:16 and is associated with life, meaning that walking with God contains the secret of being transitioned from death to life. The Bible promises that reconciliation and close fellowship with God overcome sin, liberate us from death, and grant us eternal life.

(3) Enoch lived contemporaneously with Adam for 308 years and ascended into heaven 57 years after Adam died at the age of 930.

✻ Organized and presented for the first time in history

Calculation:
987 years after Adam (year of Enoch's ascension)
– 930 (Adam's age at death)
= 57 years

Enoch's ascension was a special event that reilluminated back to God's greatest gift: eternal life. Enoch's transfiguration attested to the prospect of eternal life and at the same time sowed conviction in

life's victory over death. This is great encouragement and hope for the righteous who thirst for the good news of eternal life while living under the shadows of sin and death.

After receiving his sentence from God for his disobedience, Adam also received the firm promise that Eden would be restored by the seed of the woman (Gen 3:15). He witnessed to his descendants through accounts of the blessed world of Eden and emphasized to them that the most significant issue that mankind had needed to resolve was the issue of death. Furthermore, he probably testified in detail about the world before and after sin. Adam's desire, born in faith, finally materialized and yielded fruit through Enoch. There were godly descendants after Adam who believed in God, but only Enoch yielded the fruit of transfiguration because he had reverence for the Word of God, which he learned through Adam during their 308 years together. Among Adam's numerous descendants, only Enoch followed the Word fully. As a result, when he had walked with God for 300 years, God took him because there was no reason to keep him further on the earth.

Enoch was not excluded from the curse of death brought on by the fall; he was to die just as Adam had died 57 years earlier. However, God granted him the special privilege of directly entering into eternal life by overcoming death. His example testifies that there is a final reward for those who maintain godliness even though the ungodliness of their surroundings is at its peak.

(4) There were seven witnesses to Enoch's deeds, transfiguration, and ascension.

All the patriarchs of Primeval History were alive at the time of Enoch's ascension except Adam, who had died 57 years earlier, and Noah, who was born 69 years later.40 These seven patriarchs were Seth, Enosh, Kenan, Mahalalel, Jared, Methuselah, and Lamech.

When Enoch was taken up to heaven, Seth was 857 years old, Enosh 752, Kenan 662, Mahalalel 592, Enoch's father Jared, 527, Methuselah 300, and Lamech 113. They witnessed Enoch boldly preaching the Word of God and His judgment against the ungodly world (Jude 1:14–15), his flawless walk with God, his godliness while raising a family, and his ascension. His ascension confirmed Adam's teachings about the Garden of Eden and that the world of eternal life without death is real.

(5) The birth of Enoch's son, Methuselah, was a sign of the judgment by flood.

When Enoch fathered Methuselah, he received a revelation from God regarding judgment upon the pervasively wicked world through the flood.

① Enoch fathered a son at the age of 65 and began to walk with God. He named this son Methuselah ("when he dies, judgment").
② Methuselah lived 969 years, which coincides precisely with the year of the flood (Gen 5:27-32; 7:6; 11:10).

Calculation:
Methuselah was 187 years old when he fathered Lamech;
Lamech was 182 years old when he fathered Noah;
the flood occurred when Noah was 600 years old:
187 + 182 + 600 = 969

Therefore, Methuselah's birth was God's revelation and sign of the judgment by flood.

(6) Enoch demonstrated the eternal life that would have been possible if Adam had not committed the first sin.

Enoch attained the proper image of man that Adam should have had. The eternal life that he received after walking with God showed the world what Adam would have possessed had he not sinned. Enoch's walk with God—the secret to his transfiguration—revealed the kind of life that God had wanted and expected from Adam when He created him. God wanted Adam to be of one heart and will with Him; He had

wanted Adam to eat and live before Him. However, Adam disregarded God's command and listened to Eve's words. In his arrogance, he made the decision to eat the fruit from the tree of knowledge of good and evil without asking God. As a result, Adam drifted far away, prompting God to remind him of his place and state by asking, "Where are you?" (Gen 3:9).

Close examination of the ten generations between Adam and Noah reveals that although Enoch was the seventh generation from Adam, none of Adam's direct descendants had died before Enoch's ascension. Adam was the only person to die prior to Enoch's ascension. After Adam's death, Enoch was the second patriarch among the ten generations from Adam to Noah that concluded his life on earth. He ascended to heaven instead of passing through the gates of death (see Excursus 1: "Chronology of the Patriarchs").

Enoch's ascension teaches all mankind an important lesson. Through the death of the first man, Adam, God clearly demonstrated that the wages of sin is death (Rom 6:23); however, through Enoch, who ended his life on earth after Adam, God revealed the way to overcome the power of death. This is the hope for all: mankind can sufficiently overcome death if they restore fellowship with God and walk with Him the way Enoch had done. Enoch's ascension is a revelation to all generations to come that only faith has the power to overcome death.

About 2,200 years after Enoch, the prophet Elijah also was taken up to heaven without seeing death (2 Kgs 2:10–11). Enoch prophesied in the time between Adam and Abraham, while Elijah prophesied in the time between Abraham and Christ.

(7) Enoch foreshadows three events in the history of redemption.

① Enoch's walk with God pleased Him. This foreshadowed how Jesus Christ's life would please God (John 8:29). Additionally, Enoch's ascension foreshadowed Jesus Christ's triumph over the powers of Satan, the eternal destruction of death, and the assurance of salvation for mankind through His resurrection and ascension.

② Enoch was the presage of the precious truth that although all mankind is under condemnation through Adam, by the grace of God, there is life for all men through His only begotten Son, Jesus Christ (Rom 5:18–21; 1 Cor 15:22).

③ Enoch was the presage of the saints' glorious transfiguration at the Second Coming of Jesus Christ, when suffering and rebellion will reach their culmination (Matt 24:40; John 8:51; 11:25–26; 1 Cor 15:50–54; 1 Thess 4:16–17; Phil 3:21). Matthew Henry states, "Enoch's translation was … an evidence to faith of the reality of a future state, and of the possibility of the body's existing in glory in that state."[41]

Enoch's life became the foremost testimony of eternal life as he leapt over the great obstacle of death, which stood between God and man. Enoch received special grace and blessings as a result of his faith in God's Word, taught by Adam and his walk with God in obedience to the Word. It is our sincere hope that we will also receive the Word of God and believe in it without doubting so that we, too, can defeat the power of death and be transfigured into a spiritual body at the Second Coming of Jesus Christ.

1 Corinthians 15:51–54 Behold, I tell you a mystery; we shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, [52]in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trumpet; for the trumpet will sound, and the dead will be raised imperishable, and we shall be changed. [53]For this perishable must put on the imperishable, and this mortal must put on immortality. [54]But when this perishable will have put on the imperishable, and this mortal will have put on immortality, then will come about the saying that is written, "Death is swallowed up in victory."

8. Eighth Generation: Methuselah

מְתוּשֶׁלַח (*mĕtûšelaḥ*): when he dies, judgment,[42] man of dart

Methuselah was the son born to Enoch at the age of 65 (Gen 5:21; 1 Chr 1:3). He was born 687 years after Adam. He became the father of Lamech at the age of 187. He lived 782 more years and had other children. He died at the age of 969 (1,656 years after Adam). Amazingly, the year of his death and the year of the flood coincide (Gen 5:25–27). He lived contemporaneously with Adam for 243 years, with Enoch 300 years, and with Noah 600 years.

His name is recorded in the genealogy of Jesus in Luke 3:37 as Μαθουσαλά (*Mathousala*).

Methuselah was the son of Enoch—the one who was taken up to heaven without seeing death. The name *Methuselah* has a derived meaning: "when he dies, the world will end." Enoch must have received a special revelation at the time of Methuselah's birth regarding the fate of his child. The name could be composed of two words מַת (*mat*), meaning "man" or "male," and שֶׁלַח (*šelaḥ*), meaning "missile" or "weapon." In this case, his name would be translated as "man of the weapon" or "man of the javelin (dart)." Alternatively, the name could be a composition of the words מוּת (*mût*), meaning "die" or "kill," and שָׁלַח (*šālaḥ*), meaning "sent," "sent away," or "let go." In this case, *Methuselah* would mean "when he is dead, it shall come (be sent)."43 According to a tale from those times, every village had a guard who, with a spear in hand, protected the village. If this guard died, the village would become vulnerable to attacks from outside forces and thus could be destroyed. The name *Methuselah* suggests that perhaps he was a protector of his village; furthermore, it was believed that his death meant the end of their world.

Enoch received the revelation about the world's destruction at the time of Methuselah's birth; God revealed to Enoch that the flood would come after the death of his son. Thus, either at God's explicit direction or as an act of his own faith, Enoch named the child *Methuselah*, meaning "when he is dead, it shall come." The flood would be held back while Methuselah lived, but when he died, it would come.[44]

What kind of parent would want to bestow his/her child with a name that has a frightening eschatological meaning? Nonetheless, Enoch spread the message regarding the coming judgment and named his son according to the Word in order to prepare faith that is ready for the end.

Finally, the long-prophesied flood came upon the earth 1,656 years after Adam, on the seventeenth day of the second month of the year that Noah turned 600 years old. This was the year of Methuselah's death at the age of 969 (Gen 5:27; 7:11).

(1) Through Methuselah, Enoch came to a sure awareness of the end.

Enoch experienced a turning point in his life with the birth of Methuselah and began to walk with God. The Bible emphasizes that Enoch began his walk with God after the birth of Methuselah (Gen 5:21–22). The meaning of Methuselah's name, "when he is dead, the end of the world shall come," was probably a constant reminder of the coming judgment that prompted Enoch to prepare his faith for the end each time he called his son by name.

Enoch did not withdraw from the world to live in seclusion. He lived among his fellow men. He fathered children, raised them, and educated them. He also labored to support his family. Undoubtedly, it was difficult to walk with God during dark times governed by the sinful cultures of the secular world. Enoch's awareness of the impending judgment and his consciousness of the end made the walk possible (Luke 21:32–36).

Jude 1:14–15 supports the notion of Enoch's eschatological faith. He prophesied about God's impending judgment against the ungodly of all their ungodly deeds and all the things that ungodly sinners have spoken against Him.

(2) Methuselah enjoyed the greatest longevity in all human history.

Excluding Enoch, who was taken up to heaven, the life spans of the descendants of Adam in Genesis 5 ranged from 777 years to 969 years (an average of 912 years). This is an unimaginably long life span by today's standard. Life spans that lasted almost 1,000 years demonstrate that mankind was originally created for eternity. This gives rise to the hope that mankind will live eternally in a spiritual body in the future (1 John 2:25; Rev 22:5). At the same time, it is a demonstration of God's mercy toward mankind. God planned judgment when He saw that sins of all sorts had invaded every corner of the earth, but He delayed judgment for the 969 years of Methuselah's life. Even after Noah's ark had been built, God granted one last chance for repentance by giving notice of the impending judgment seven days prior to the flood. In essence, Methuselah's longevity represents God's patience and His great mercy and compassion for mankind (1 Tim 2:4; 2 Pet 3:9).

(3) Methuselah enjoyed the special privilege of witnessing God's amazing providence of salvation.

Methuselah was a sure witness to the entire redemptive work until the flood. In what ways did Methuselah witness the events of redemptive history during his lifetime?

① He heard Adam's account of the Garden of Eden for 243 years.

② He witnessed his father Enoch's walk with God for 300 years and saw him being taken up to heaven alive.

③ He saw the birth of Noah, a type of the Savior, during times of overflowing sin and wickedness. He lived contemporaneously with Noah for 600 years.

④ He lived from the beginning to the end of the construction of Noah's ark and probably offered the greatest amount of help with the ark. In addition, he was presumably the greatest source of strength, courage, and hope for Noah. It is most likely that Methuselah understood the ominous meaning of his name—God's judgment would come upon his death. Consequently, he lived a godly life with keen sensitivity regarding the end time until the very last day of his life and presumably expended all his efforts in testifying that God's judgment was near. As prophesied, he died at the age of 969 in the year of the flood.

⑤ He witnessed the birth of Shem, Noah's eldest son, who would continue the godly lineage after the great flood. He lived contemporaneously with Shem for 98 years (Gen 5:32; 7:6; 11:10).

9. Ninth Generation: Lamech

לֶמֶךְ (*lemek*): strong youth[45]

Lamech was the son born to Methuselah at the age of 187 (Gen 5:25; 1 Chr 1:3-4). He was born 874 years after Adam. He became the father of Noah at the age of 182. He lived 595 more years and had other children. He died at the age of 777 (1,651 years after Adam), five years before the flood (Gen 5:28–31). He lived 113 years contemporaneously with Enoch, 595 years with Noah, and 56 years with Adam. The tenth generation Noah, however, did not meet Adam because he was born 126 years after Adam's death.

His name is recorded in the genealogy of Jesus in Luke 3:36 as Λάμεχ (*Lamech*).

Enoch was 65 years old when he became the father of Methuselah and 252 years old when he became the grandfather of Lamech. Lamech must have been about 113 years old when Enoch was taken up to heaven.

Thus, both Methuselah and Lamech witnessed Enoch's godly life and walk with God. Surely, this son and grandson had been raised under the godly influence of Enoch.46

Two sets of people with the same names appear in Genesis 4 and Genesis 5. They are Enoch (Gen 4:17) and Lamech (Gen 4:18) from the line of Cain, and a different Enoch (Gen 5:21) and Lamech (Gen 5:28) from the line of Seth. These two groups of people are differentiated from one another in the genealogy through the use of additional descriptions in the Bible. Lamech from Cain's line was a man of grief and despair, while Lamech from Seth's line was a man of hope. They undoubtedly took two diverging paths in life.

In addition, the meaning of the name *Lamech* from the line of Cain is understood as "conqueror" or "strong one in confronting God." These meanings are derived from the Arabic origin of his name, which means "oppressor" or "strong one." He deserted God and boasted of his own strength. He wanted to conquer the world with evil and challenged God's will. Although they have the same name, the meaning "conqueror" or "strong one" is adequate for Lamech, the son of Methushael in the line of Cain, but not for Lamech, the son of Methuselah in the line of Seth.

The meaning, "powerful one," is more appropriate for the Lamech from the line of Seth. Furthermore, "a man of prayer"47 is another denotation given to the name of Lamech because only through prayer can one attain the power of faith to cast out demons and defeat the forces of evil (Mark 9:29). May you all become people of prayer and powerful believers who can defeat the forces of evil.

The Lamech in Genesis 5 is distinguished by an additional description that underscores the importance of his son. In other words, attention is given more to his son than to Lamech himself.

(1) Lamech had a son and named him Noah ("comforter" or "giver of peace").

The name *Noah* was Lamech's confession of faith and his desire toward the will of God.

> Genesis 5:28–29 And Lamech lived one hundred and eighty-two years, and became the father of a son. [29]Now he called his name Noah, saying, "This one shall give us rest from our work and from the toil of our hands arising from the ground which the Lord has cursed."

This passage contains Lamech's anguished cry regarding the fragility of mankind that he so acutely recognized through his own deep suffering on this earth. This Lamech was a godly man. He acknowledged man's inability to overcome suffering. He recognized that suffering and sadness in life were the result of the fall of man and God's subsequent curse. Thus, he did not rebel against God or give up under the duress of suffering and affliction; rather, these things motivated his faith. He trusted solely in God and hoped that the curse would be lifted through his son (Gen 5:29).

Only those who sincerely repent, acknowledging that the evil of the times is the result of their own sins, can possess true faith to conquer this world.48

(2) Lamech earnestly anticipated the coming of the Messiah.

Lamech longed for the end of man's sorrowful fallen state and the restoration of Eden. He hoped that someone would lift the death sentence declared upon man (Gen 3:24; 4:16) and open the path for recovery to the original state of man before the fall. He understood all too keenly the pain associated with life and the frailty of mankind and hoped that true peace and consolation from God would come with the birth of his son. Accordingly, Genesis 5:29 expresses Lamech's sincere longing for the Messiah and the joyful news for all mankind. His hope was similar to the apostle Paul's confession in 2 Corinthians 1:5: "For just as the sufferings of Christ are ours in abundance, so also our comfort is abundant through Christ."

Lamech's son Noah promised a new beginning for mankind; he was a gift from the "God of all comfort" (2 Cor 1:3–7). He was a type (foreshadow) of Jesus Christ whom God had sent. Jesus Christ is the one who gives true comfort and rest to this earth (Isa 9:6; John 14:27). Lamech's burning hope for the Messiah was evident in his confession of faith.

(3) Lamech lived the shortest life (777 years) among the ten generations since Adam.

Lamech lived the shortest life among the ten patriarchs from Adam to Noah. Considering that "seven" is the number of completion, however, it is plausible that he completed all his tasks in life during the 777 years. He most likely helped his son Noah to build the ark since he longed to see the day when the revelation he received would be fulfilled. Presumably, God took Lamech abruptly five years before the flood—before the calamity and evil came (Isa 57:1)—because he had offered the best of his entire life for the fulfillment of His will.

(4) Like other patriarchs, Lamech had many children until he was 777 years old.

> Genesis 5:30 Then Lamech lived five hundred and ninety-five years after he became the father of Noah, and he had other sons and daughters.

Lamech's children were Noah's biological siblings. They were all loved, raised, and trained by the same godly father. However, none of Noah's many siblings were to be found at the time of the flood; only the eight members of Noah's immediate family were saved. All the other children born to Lamech had rejected their father's teachings and refused to listen to the Word of God. They followed after the wickedness of the times. Because they were Noah's siblings, they probably received more appeals to enter into the ark than others, but they rejected them all. They enjoyed life in the world, yielded to their own desires, and did not cooperate with the building of the ark. Although they were so close to the ark's actual builder, all of Noah's siblings were washed away by the waters of judgment. In other words, they had the channel of salvation very close to them, but they could not be saved because they did not believe.49

In Matthew 24:37 it is written, "For the coming of the Son of Man will be just like the days of Noah." We must not become so foolish as to disregard the Word of God and miss the ark of salvation as Noah's siblings had done.

10. Tenth Generation: Noah

נֹחַ (*nōaḥ*): rest, comfort

Noah was the son born to Lamech at the age of 182 (Gen 5:28; 1 Chr 1:4). He was born 1,056 years after Adam. He became the father of Shem at the age of 502 and later of Ham and of Japheth. He lived 350 years after the flood, but he did not have any other children. He died at the age of 950 (2,006 years after Adam [Gen 5:32; 9:28–29; 11:10]).

His name is recorded in the genealogy of Jesus in Luke 3:36 as Νῶε (*Nōe*).

The name *Noah* is derived from the Hebrew word נוּחַ (*nûaḥ*), which means "to settle down," "appease," or "rest" (Deut 5:14; 2 Kgs 2:15; Lam 5:5). The derived meanings from this word are "Sabbath," "rest," and "comfort."

The godly descendants who lived in the world abounding with iniquity longed earnestly for God's comfort through the birth of this son (Gen 6:5). Genesis 5:29 states, "Now he called his name Noah, saying, 'This one shall give us rest from our work . . . .'" Here, the Hebrew verb *give rest* is in the Piel stem. As such, the meaning that rest would *surely* be brought is being stressed, thus demonstrating the godly descendants' desire to be consoled by God.

It was not from Lamech's personal desire or through human discernment that he named his son *Noah*, which has a messianic meaning, "comfort" and "consolation." The name is a reflection of a newly revealed providence of redemption from God.50 The end to the long period of suffering had come; it was now time for God's comfort and rest. In his commentary on Genesis, Yune-Sun Park notes on Genesis 5:29 that Lamech had named his son "rest" because he mistook this child to be the Messiah. In other words, he suggests that Lamech thought that this child was the Savior, who was to come and deliver all mankind from the curse of sin. Park deduces that people of the early times must have placed their hope in the coming of the Messiah according to the promise of God (Gen 3:15).51

The Bible states that Noah's time was so wicked to the extent that God was sorry that He had made man (Gen 6:5–7). Accordingly, the verse "But Noah found favor in the eyes of the Lord" (Gen 6:8) emphasizes that Noah was God's bright lamp during that dark and wicked time and reveals the total depravity of a world in which not one godly person lived except for Noah and his family. This is why 2 Peter 2:5 states, "And [God] did not spare the ancient world, but preserved Noah, a preacher of righteousness, with seven others, when He brought a flood upon the world of the ungodly."

Noah's time was so ungodly that there was not one person who received Noah's message of warning as the truth or in any way attempted to understand it until all were destroyed by the flood (Matt 24:38–39). Likewise, God will also seek out the godly during the ungodly times of the end. Like Noah, we must also find favor in God's eyes so that we may stand before the Son of Man (Ps 12:1; Mic 7:2; Luke 21:36).

(1) Lamech had a son at the age of 182 (Gen 5:28).

> Genesis 5:28 And Lamech lived one hundred and eighty-two years, and became the father of a son.

This verse deviates from the usual structure of this genealogy. For the previous patriarchs, it was written "became the father of" followed by the son's name. For Lamech, however, it was written "became the father of" without mentioning the son's name. Genesis 5:29 also makes mention of this son.

> Genesis 5:29 Now he called his name Noah, saying, "This one shall give us rest from our work and from the toil of our hands arising from the ground which the Lord has cursed."

The word *son* is used distinctively in Genesis 5:28. The author makes the extra effort to suggest that this was not just another son among many, but rather, a *unique son* much like the "only begotten Son" (John 1:14, 18; 3:16, 18; 1 John 4:9). Just as Eve had rejoiced when giving birth to her first son, saying, "I have gotten a manchild with the help of the Lord" (Gen 4:1), so too did Noah's birth give rise to expectation, joy, and meaning because this son was a type of Jesus Christ who was to come as the only begotten Son (John 3:16).

The name *Noah* foreshadows Jesus Christ, who would come to save this world and give the true Sabbath rest. In obedience to God's Word, Noah prepared the ark and saved his family from God's judgment that destroyed the fallen world. As a result, they obtained Sabbath rest. Jesus is the Comforter who came in the flesh to the fallen world to declare the true Sabbath (John 14:27). When, in His Second Coming, Christ arrives to judge the world by fire, He will once again save His chosen people and lead them to heaven, the kingdom of the true Sabbath.

(2) Noah lived at the junction of two ages.

There is no mention of Noah's age or the remaining years of his life in Genesis 5. This implies God's holy will to establish the work of redemption in a new light through Noah (Gen 5:32). Primeval history was to end with Noah, and a new world was to commence after the flood, leading to the emergence of Abraham (Gen 12:1–3). Noah lived contemporaneously with Abraham for 58 years.

Calculation:
Year of Noah's death (2,006 years after Adam)
– Year of Abraham's birth (1,948)
= 58 years

Noah met with all but three of the ten generations of patriarchs before the flood: Adam, Seth, and Enoch. Among the ten generations after Adam, he lived the third-longest life with a life span of 950 years (Gen 9:28–29). He lived to see all ten generations after the flood down to Abraham. Altogether, Noah lived contemporaneously with seventeen generations of patriarchs, himself included.

The following are facts related to Noah's birth:

① Noah was born 126 years after Adam's death.

Calculation:
Year of Noah's birth (1,056 years after Adam)
– Year of Adam's death (930)
= 126 years

② Noah was born 69 years after Enoch's ascension.

Calculation:
Year of Noah's birth (1,056 years after Adam)
– Year of Enoch's ascension (987)
= 69 years

③ Noah was born 14 years after Seth's death.

Calculation:
Year of Noah's birth (1,056 years after Adam)
– Year of Seth's death (1,042)
= 14 years

(3) During the 136-year period between the death of Jared (sixth generation) and the birth of Shem, all the patriarchs in the line of Seth had died except for Methuselah, Lamech, and Noah.

Calculation:
Year of Shem's birth (1,558 years after Adam)
– Year of Jared's death (1,422)
= 136 years

Noah was 502 years old when he became the father of Shem. At the time, all the patriarchs in the line of Seth had already died, and only three patriarchs were alive during the 136 years between the death of Jared and the birth of Shem. After Shem's birth, Ham and Japheth were also born to Noah (Gen 5:32; 6:10). It was after all three of his sons had married that God appeared to Noah and gave him precise instructions for the construction of the ark in preparation for the flood (Gen 6:14–18).

(4) The prediluvian world in which Noah lived was completely corrupt.

Genesis 6:2 states, "The sons of God saw that the daughters of men were beautiful; and they took wives for themselves, whomever they chose." This refers to how the godly descendants of Seth (Gen 5) intermarried with the corrupt descendants of Cain (Gen 4), deserted God, and became men of the flesh (Gen 6:3). Consequently, God declared, "My Spirit shall not strive with man forever" (Gen 6:3).

At that time, the wickedness of the world had accelerated and the earth abounded with all types of sin, leaving no place left uncorrupted (Gen 6:5). Here, "the wickedness of man was great on the earth" implies that sin had seeped into every corner of the human heart so that wickedness sprung forth and overflowed. All the intents behind the people's thoughts and plans were continually against faith, evil from the beginning to the end; they completely rejected God's rule and involvement (Gen 6:5).

Genesis 6:11 describes the extent of the corruption: "Now the earth was corrupt in the sight of God,

and the earth was filled with violence." The English word *corrupt* comes from the Latin word *corruptus*, past participle of *corrumpere*, from *com* + *rumpere* ("to break"), meaning "to change from good to bad in terms of morals, manners, or actions," or "to degrade with unsound principles or moral values." Violence is the exertion of physical force so as to injure or abuse (as in warfare, or effecting illegal entry into a house).52 Thus, to say that the earth was corrupt and filled with violence means that abuse, injury, murder, robbery, rape, and other violent, illegal activities were rampant. This is why God said, "The end of all flesh has come before Me" (Gen 6:13), declaring that this age was about to encounter the impending judgment by flood.

The world just before the flood was so desperately corrupt to the extent that God was sorry that He had made man, and He grieved (Gen 6:6). This is surely a shocking statement. The flood was God's fearful punishment against the dissipated world that did not place God in its heart. Noah, however, found favor in the eyes of God despite the corruption of the times (Gen 6:8). Genesis 6:9 explains, "Noah was a righteous man, blameless in his time; Noah walked with God."

This age in which we are living is also rapidly following the path of extreme corruption and violence. Jesus said that the time of the Son of Man would be like the days of Noah (Matt 24:37; Luke 17:26). Noah built the ark as God had commanded (Gen 6:22; 7:5), and as a result God said, "You alone I have seen to be righteous before Me in this time" (Gen 7:1).

We need to receive God's grace just as Noah did. In 1 Peter 1:13 we are urged, "Therefore, gird your minds for action, keep sober in spirit, fix your hope completely on the grace to be brought to you at the revelation of Jesus Christ." We need to receive this grace in order to prepare the ark of faith (Heb 11:7) and stand in the order of the saved ones when He comes to judge by fire in the end (2 Pet 3:7, 12).

(5) There are three notable traits about the birth of Noah's sons.

① Until Noah, the patriarchs' average age at procreation was 118 (Gen 5). Noah was unique. He became the father of his sons after the age of 500 (Gen 5:32). The Bible gives the exact year of Shem's birth. He was born 98 years before the flood, when Noah was 502 years old.

> Genesis 11:10 These are the records of the generations of Shem. Shem was one hundred years old, and became the father of Arpachshad two years after the flood.

Noah lived to be 950 years old. When comparing Noah's lifespan after he begot his three sons with the previous generations' corresponding lifespan, we see that Noah's life after fatherhood would have been long enough to see the births of about six generations (Jared, the sixth generation from Adam, was born 460 years after Adam).

② Unlike the other patriarchs who fathered their children until they died, there is no scriptural record of Noah having additional children after he had his three sons. It is only recorded that he lived another 350 years (after he was 600 years old), for a total of 950 years, and then died (Gen 5:32; 6:10; 9:28–29). This pattern repeats once again with Terah, the nineteenth generation from Adam (Gen 11:26). He had Abraham, Nahor, and Haran at the age of 70, with no further record of his having additional children.

③ Noah's three sons were married before the flood, but did not have any children until they entered the ark and the flood began.

> Genesis 6:18 But I will establish My covenant with you; and you shall enter the ark—you and your sons and your wife, and your sons' wives with you.

Only eight people entered the ark (Gen 7:7, 13; 8:18; 1 Pet 3:20; 2 Pet 2:25). Also, it is recorded that

Noah's three daughters-in-law gave birth to sons after the flood.

> Genesis 10:1 Now these are the records of the generations of Shem, Ham, and Japheth, the sons of Noah; and sons were born to them after the flood.

There must be a significant reason for Moses' specifically remembering to record the age when each patriarch fathered his firstborn as he was writing the godly genealogy of faith. The patriarch's godly lives and the circumstances of those times are reflected in such details.

Noah had children at an old age (after he was 500 years old [Gen 5:32]) and did not have additional children after the three sons that God had given to him. His sons began to have children only after the flood. These facts reveal that they had wholeheartedly believed in the message of judgment received by Noah and fully participated in the preparation work. This is also evident in the verse "And Noah did according to all that the Lord had commanded him" (Gen 6:22; 7:5). God was bringing the corrupt age to a close; its end was near.

> Genesis 6:13 Then God said to Noah, "The end of all flesh has come before Me; for the earth is filled with violence because of them; and behold, I am about to destroy them with the earth."

(6) Noah built the ark with reverence for God.

After God warned Noah about the corruption of his time (Gen 6:1–8), He directed him to build the ark (Gen 6:14–16). Of course, God Himself supplied Noah with the precise instructions and design for the ark. The Bible testifies that Noah built the ark according to the plan that God had given to him (Gen 6:22; 7:5).

Hebrews 11:7 reveals why Noah was able to complete all that God had commanded him: "In reverence [he] prepared an ark." The word *reverence* describes a heart, which, with fear and trembling, strives to obey God's Word—spoken only once—until the very end. Noah did not envy the prosperity of the wicked. He believed it was man's rightful duty to revere God (Prov 23:17; Eccl 12:13). The more he revered God, the more God poured His wisdom upon Noah, so that he could complete the ark. The fear of God is the beginning of wisdom (Job 28:28; Ps 111:10; Prov 1:7; 9:10; 15:33). In truth, the ark was the perfect manifestation of Noah's faith and reverence for God.

Noah's ability to spend such an extended period of time building the ark without a change of heart is proof of his reverence and firm belief in God's promise. While he was building the ark, people were merely watching, ridiculing him and shaking their fingers at him in reproach. One can only imagine Noah's heartache and his emotional and physical fatigue during that long period of time.

Having seen how Noah so patiently built the ark through all those years, God said, "For you alone I have seen to be righteous before Me in this time" (Gen 7:1). God's praise must have felt like long-awaited rain during a drought. Faith is not about words, but rather about deeds, such as Noah's act of building the ark. The greater the faith, the better the preparation. Jesus also commanded, "For this reason you must be ready" (Matt 24:44). Those who are ready can enter the wedding feast (Matt 25:10). Let us stay alert and prepare the lamp and the oil to welcome the bridegroom (Matt 25:1–13). There is no other way for believers to stand before the Son of Man in the end except by being alert in prayer (Luke 21:36).

(7) After the flood, God made a covenant with Noah as the second ancestor of mankind after Adam.

God completely tore down the structure of the entire wicked world through the flood and prepared for a new beginning. The flood did not bring an end to the world. Although God knew that the evil heart of man remained even after the flood (Gen 8:21), in His absolute grace and mercy He enacted the eternal covenant of the rainbow, vowing that He would never again destroy the earth by flood (Gen 9:9–17).

Thus, history will be preserved by the grace of God until the end predetermined by God and until salvation is perfected through Jesus Christ. God blessed Noah and his sons to be fruitful, to multiply, and

to fill the earth (Gen 9:1, 7) just as He had blessed Adam (Gen 1:28; 2:15). The blessing of the beginning, "be fruitful and multiply," was renewed in Noah's time and remained effective in the new world after the flood.

From the time of Noah, the world entered into the period of rest from God's wrath. Now, true rest will be given through Jesus Christ, the Lord of the Sabbath (Matt 12:8; John 14:27).

Excursus 3

The Duration of the Ark Construction

(✙ Organized and presented for the first time in history)

In general, commentaries and expositions on the Book of Genesis assert that the construction of Noah's ark took 120 years. The following is a collection of excerpts in support of the view that the duration of the construction of the ark was 120 years.

"One hundred and twenty years were sufficient time for constructing the ark."

The Grand Bible Commentary: With Comprehensive and Synthetic Exegetical Study Methods. Edited by Disciples Publishing House (Seoul: Bible Study Material Publisher, 1991), 1:400

"One hundred and twenty years is the time in which Noah built the ark by persistently following the Word of God through unchanging faith. . . ."

Byung-Don Lee, *Genesis Exegetical Postil* (Seoul: Yechansa, 1985), 48

"The fact that the construction period for the ark was 120 years. . . . "

Won-Tae Suk, *A Commentary on Genesis* (Seoul: Kyunghyang, 2002), 95

"Noah built the ark for 120 years according to God's command" [Gen 6:3].

Won-Tae Suk, *Complete Sermon Collection*, vol. 2 (Seoul: Kyunghyang, 1985), 350

"...said, 'prepared an ark....' He prepared the ark for about 120 years."

Won-Tae Suk, *Anthology 4: Revealed Theology* (Seoul: Kyunghyang, 1991) , 113

"After receiving God's revelation, Noah built the ark for 120 days [typo for 120 years]."

Won-Tae Suk, *Complete Sermon Collection*, vol. 15 (Seoul: Kyunghyang, 2002), 238

"Noah prepared the ark through faith for over 120 years."

Won-Tae Suk, *Complete Sermon Collection*, vol. 27 (Seoul: Kyunghyang, 1999), 324

"During the long period of 120 years, all eight members of Noah's family (Gen 7:7–13) put their strengths together to complete the ark, the great vessel, according to God's blueprint. . . . They built the ark for 120 years according to God's command."

David Yonggi Cho, *Commentary on the Genesis I* (Seoul: Seoul Logos, 1996), 111

"For about 120 years (Gen 6:3) . . . Noah and his sons followed God's instructions and were building a great ship."

C. H. Kang and Ethel R. Nelson, *Discovery of Genesis: How the Truths of Genesis Were Found Hidden in the Chinese Language* (St. Louis: Concordia, 1998), 113

"A ship is not something that can be built in 1 or 2 years. I would think that it took all 120 years."

Suh-Taek Kim, *The Great Flood and the Covenant of the Rainbow* (Seoul: Hong Sung Sa, 1997), 207

Despite arguments presented by many scholars, it is clear that Noah did not spend 120 years building the ark. This is a critical issue, since nothing should be added or taken away from the Word of God recorded in the Bible (Rev 22:18–19). For instance, how erroneous would it be to say that Jesus lived on this earth for 35 years when it actually was 33 years?

When God mentioned the "one hundred and twenty years" in Genesis 6:3, it was His warning against the fleshliness and corruption of mankind and a warning regarding the impending judgment (Gen 6:7). God did not give a revelation about the ark at this time.

After some time had passed, Noah became the father of three sons (Gen 6:10). After some more time had passed, his sons were married. It was only after all this time had passed that God commanded Noah, "Make for yourself an ark" (Gen 6:14), and gave him detailed instructions for the ark (Gen 6:15–16). Then He declared, "And behold, I, even I am bringing the flood of water upon the earth" (Gen 6:17). However, 120 years before the flood, Noah was 480 years old and that was 22 years before he had Shem,

his first son (Gen 5:32; 7:7, 11; 11:10).

Calculation of the duration of the construction:

1. Noah was 600 years old when the judgment of the flood occurred (Gen 7:6, 11). Noah gave birth to his three sons after he was 500 years old (Gen 5:32).
2. By the time Noah received the revelation about the ark, Noah's sons were already born to him and were married.

Genesis 6:10 states, "And Noah became the father of three sons: Shem, Ham, and Japheth." Later, in Genesis 6:14, God instructed Noah to build the ark. God gave him the instructions for building the ark and pronounced destruction upon all the living things on the earth (Gen 6:17).

Thus, the ark was built after Noah's three sons were born (after Noah was 500 years old) until Noah was 600 years old, when the flood occurred. This means that the ark was actually built in less than 100 years.

3. Noah's sons were born to him after he turned 500 years old. They were already grown and married when God commanded Noah to build the ark (Gen 6:14).

The New Revised Standard Version of Genesis 5:32 states, "After Noah was five hundred years old, Noah became the father of Shem, Ham, and Japheth." According to Genesis 11:10, Noah was 502 years old when he became the father of Shem. The Bible states that Noah received the revelation about the flood after his sons grew up and were married (Gen 6:18; 7:13). This is when Noah began to build the ark according to God's instructions (Gen 6:22).

4. Since Noah had Shem at the age of 502, we can conclude that it took Noah less than 98 years to build the ark (Noah's age 600 – 502 = 98). The number of years would significantly decrease when the age of Shem upon marriage is taken into account.

Even if Noah had all three sons consecutively, it would have taken him at least three years from the age of 502. His sons would have been at least 15 years of age in order to be married. Considering this, the period for building the ark can be estimated to have been approximately 70 to 80 years. Therefore, the view that it took Noah 120 years to build the ark is erroneous.

Excursus 4

The Meaning of the 120 Years in Genesis 6:3

Genesis 6:3 Then the LORD said, "My Spirit shall not strive with man forever, because he also is flesh; nevertheless his days shall be one hundred and twenty years."

וַיֹּאמֶר יְהוָה לֹא־יָדוֹן רוּחִי בָאָדָם לְעֹלָם בְּשַׁגַּם הוּא בָשָׂר
וְהָיוּ יָמָיו מֵאָה וְעֶשְׂרִים שָׁנָה

It is generally believed that it took 120 years to build the ark. Where did this number come from? The assertion that Noah built the ark for 120 years seems to be based on Genesis 6:3. However, as noted in Excursus 3, the 120 years mentioned in Genesis 6:3 clearly does not refer to the number of years that it took Noah to build the ark.

What, then, do the 120 years in Genesis 6:3 refer to? There are two differing views among theologians regarding this time period.

I. The View That the 120 Years Refers to the Shortened Life Span

The following is a collection of excerpts from scholars who interpret the 120 years as the maximum life span granted to mankind as a result of sin.

"On the other hand, according to 5:32, Noah was 500 years old when he fathered Ham, Shem, and Japhet, and 600 years old when the Flood began (7:6), so some commentators (e.g., Heil, Konig, Kidner) have suggested that 120 years represents a period of grace before the Flood. It may be, however, that the author thought of the 120 years as the maximum life-span that was only gradually implemented; cf. the slow-acting curses of Eden 3:16–19. In the post-Flood period, the recorded ages steadily decline (chap. 11), and later figures very rarely exceed 120."

Gordon J. Wenham, *Genesis 1–15*, Word Biblical Commentary 1 (Waco, TX: Word, 1987), 142

"Because all the descendants of Seth followed the path of the descendants of Cain, God shortened their lives to 120 years as punishment. Though people lived about 200 years just after the Flood, their lives were to be shortened to 120 years thereafter. The words 'his days' mean that the lives of all mankind would be shortened dramatically as in the case of one man."

Chul-Won Suh, *The Book of Genesis* (Seoul: Grisim, 2001), 258–59

"The words '120 years' . . . it seems proper to interpret the meaning as the life span of mankind after the Flood and evidence is found in the fact that the life span of mankind gradually shortened so that it eventually did not exceed 120 years."

Yong-Kuk Wone, *A Commentary of Genesis* (Seoul: Se Shin Culture, 1990), 152

" . . . the operation of God's life-giving spirit in man crippled by sin; and in future the normal limit of his life shall not exceed 120 years."

S. R. Driver, *The Book of Genesis* (London: Methuen, 1904), 83–84

"The sense of this passage is apparently this: the earliest generations, which were the strongest on account of their nearness to the Divine source, lived almost to a thousand years, the day of the Almighty; but the span of life was diminishing from generation to generation, and in the end would be stabilized at the point where the healthiest person, if he did not suffer illness or any calamity, would be able to live only a little more than a hundred years—a hundred and twenty years according to the round figure of tradition."

U. Cassuto, *A Commentary on the Book of Genesis: Part 1, From Adam to Noah*, trans. Israel Abrahams (Jerusalem: Magnes, 1961), 297–98

"The limitation of 120 years most likely refers to a reduction of the life span of humans."

John H. Walton, Victor H. Matthews, and Mark W. Chavalas, *The IVP Bible Background Commentary: Old Testament* (Downers Grove, IL: InterVarsity Press, 2000), 36

"The sad reality of the narrative, however, is that such long lives do not belong to mankind as a whole but belonged to another age. . . . Henceforth man's life would be 'a hundred and twenty years' only. Such a short life, in comparison with the long lives of the previous chapter, marks man's fall and separation from his Creator."

John H. Sailhamer, *The Expositor's Bible Commentary with the New International Version*, ed. Frank E. Gaebelein, vol. 2 (Grand Rapids: Zondervan, 1990), 77

II. The View That the 120 Years Was a Grace Period for Repentance before the Judgment

The second view argues that the 120 years was a period of grace granted to men before judgment so that they may repent and return to God.

"This does not mean that life span of man was limited to 120 years, but that there would be the judgment of the Flood after 120 years."

"They were given 120 years of opportunity to repent, but they did not obey."

Yune-Sun Park, *A Commentary on Genesis*, vol. 1 (Seoul: Yung Eum Sa, 1991), 132–33

"The word 'days' refers to 120 years. It, however, does not signify the period of man's life. It signifies that God reserved the judgment 120 years."

The Oxford Bible Interpreter. Edited by Disciples Publishing House (Seoul: Bible Study Material Publisher, 1989), 1:391

"It means that God would judge 120 years later. . . . If people do not repent during the period of grace given by God, God's judgment will be upon them so that they perish."

Byung-Kyu Lee, *The Commentary on Genesis* (Seoul: Yum Kwang, 1986), 86–87

"More likely, this phrase means that God will extend a (grace period) of 120 years before expending His wrath (in the Flood)."

Earl D. Radmacher, gen. ed., *The Nelson Study Bible: NKJV*, ed. Ronald B. Allen (Nashville: Thomas Nelson, 1997) 16

"God has always been long-suffering, even under such awful conditions as prevailed in the days of Noah (1 Peter 3:20). Though all had rejected Him, He still granted 120 years to mankind in light of the bare possibility that at least some might 'come to repentance' (2 Peter 3:9). This was more than adequate time even for those who were infants to grow to maturity and have abundant opportunity to accept or reject God."

Henry M. Morris, *The Genesis Record: A Scientific and Devotional Commentary on the Book of Beginnings* (Grand Rapids: Baker, 1976), 171

"Early exegesis of this verse prefers to see here a reference to the interval of time remaining before the Flood. The figure would then represent three conventional generations of forty years each."

Nahum M. Sarna, *Genesis: The Traditional Hebrew Text with New JPS Translation*, JPS Torah Commentary (Philadelphia: Jewish Publication Society, 1989), 46

"We believe that Noah preached for 120 years, and during that time the Spirit of God was striving with men."

J. Vernon McGee, *Genesis: Chapters 1–15* (Nashville: Thomas Nelson, 1991), 119

"Nevertheless both ancient and modern Jewish expositors, e.g. Rashi and Reggio, Abenezra and Heidenheim, explain this 120 years of a respite accorded to men for the purpose of obviating by repentance the judgment of extermination."

Franz Delitzsch, *New Commentary on Genesis*, vol. 2 (Minneapolis: Klock & Klock Christian Publishers, 1978), 230–31

"And the period of 120 years becomes one of probation, in the face of every sign that the doom cannot be averted. All of this accords with the separately established fact that the Flood story in Genesis, unlike its Mesopotamian analogues, was morally motivated."

E. A. Speiser, *Genesis*, Anchor Bible 1 (Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1979), 7

"Is this an age limit, or is it a period of grace prior to the Flood (i.e., his [remaining] days shall be 120 years)? The first alternative faces the difficulty that most of the people in the rest of Genesis lived well beyond 120 years. It is possible to interpret the longer life spans of the patriarchs as a mitigation or suspension of the divine penalty, just as an earlier announced divine penalty ('on the day you eat of it you shall surely die') was not immediately implanted.

But the (imminent) withdrawal of the divine Spirit as a means of lowering the life span of humanity does not make a great deal of sense. Rather, it seems to presage some event that is about to occur. Accordingly, we prefer to see in this phrase a reference to a period of time that prefaces the Flood's beginning. It is parallel to Jon. 4:5, 'Yet forty days, and Nineveh shall be overthrown.' God's hand of judgment is put on hold."

Victor P. Hamilton, *The Book of Genesis: Chapters 1–17* (Grand Rapids: Eerdmans, 1990), 269

"It is more likely that 'the period of 120 years becomes one of probation, in the face of every sign that the doom cannot be averted' (Speiser, p. 46)."

Clifton J. Allen, ed., *The Broadman Bible Commentary*, vol. 1, rev. ed. (Nashville: Broadman, 1969), 142–43

"For these words, 'yet shall their days be one hundred and twenty years,' are to be taken in the sense of the traditional interpretation: one last period of grace is fixed by God for the repentance of mankind. . . . Before disposing of the guilty ones a time of grace of no less than one hundred and twenty years is allowed for their repentance."

H. G. Leupold, *Exposition of Genesis*, vol. 1 (Grand Rapids: Baker, 1942), 256

"The 120 years was taken by Luther (also Calvin and The Scofield Bible) to refer to a time of reprieve granted by God to mankind before sending the Flood ('I want to give them yet a reprieve of 120 years,' Luther Bible)."

John H. Sailhamer, *The Expositor's Bible Commentary with the New International Version*, ed. Frank E. Gaebelein, vol. 2 (Grand Rapids: Zondervan, 1990), 77

The two differing arguments presented here on the meaning of the "one hundred and twenty years" in Genesis 6:3 are both valid arguments. It is impossible to conclude which argument is right or wrong, for each person interprets the meaning according to his or her own faith. However, one thing is clear. The "one hundred and twenty years" does not refer to the time it took to build the ark. John H. Walton also views the 120-year period as the grace period before the flood and argues that some have unnecessarily concluded that it took Noah 120 years to build the ark. Walton states, "But even if the 120 does represent the time left until the Flood, there is no hint in the text that all of this period was occupied by Noah's building activity."[33]

CHAPTER 11

The Genealogy from Shem to Abraham

The second genealogy, from Shem to Abraham, continues in Genesis 11, following the genealogy from Adam to Noah in Genesis 5. This genealogy illustrates how mankind had multiplied to fill the earth and focuses attention on the one figure Abraham, who is chosen from among the multitude to lead the work of redemption. Genesis 10 introduces Noah, his three sons, and their 70 descendants. In Genesis 11, Shem is chosen among Noah's three sons; and from his line, Abraham, the new starting point of redemptive history, emerges.

What is heartbreaking in the genealogy of Shem's descendants in Genesis 11 is the fact that mankind became sinful once again after the flood, and erected the Tower of Babel. Shem's descendants also took part in that sin when they should have guarded their godliness. As a result, the life span of mankind was abruptly shortened from the time of Peleg and thereafter as they continued to sin.

It was during these spiritually dark times that God chose Abraham and called him out of the land of Ur of the Chaldeans, where sin had prevailed (Gen 11:31–32). Ultimately, Abraham made the firm decision in faith to leave his father in his old age and departed from Haran at the age of 75 finally to set foot on the land of Canaan (Gen 12:1–5).

11. Eleventh Generation: Shem

שֵׁם (*šēm*): name, reputation, fame[54]

> **Shem was born 1,558 years after Adam (still before the flood, when Noah was 502 years old). He became the father of Arpachshad at the age of 100 (2 years after the flood) and lived 500 years more and had other children. He died at the age of 600 (2,158 years after Adam [Gen 11:10–11]). Shem lived 448 years contemporaneously with his father Noah (1 Chr 1:4). He lived 35 years more after Abraham's death, until Isaac was 110 years old and Jacob was 50 years old. Shem was 98 years old when the flood occurred and lived to the age of 600. He lived a long life and witnessed the world before and after the flood. He lived contemporaneously with 15 generations of patriarchs, from Methuselah (eighth) to Jacob (twenty-second).**
>
> **His name is recorded in the genealogy of Jesus in Luke 3:36 as Σήμ (*Sēm*).**

Shem was Noah's firstborn, but the narrative of the genealogy in Genesis 10 lists Noah's sons in the order of Japheth, Ham, and Shem. This was done to focus attention on Shem and his descendants, who would become the center of the redemptive history. Just as Noah prophesied, "Blessed be the Lord, the God of Shem" (Gen 9:26), the descendants of Shem are the central figures in the history of redemption, for Jesus Christ would come through this lineage.

Shem was born to Noah before the flood at the age of 502 (Gen 11:10), 1,558 years after Adam. Noah was 600 years old at the time of the flood, and Shem was 98 years old.

> Genesis 11:10 These are the records of the generations of Shem. Shem was one hundred years old, and became the father of Arpachshad two years after the flood.

The name *Shem* means "honor" and "renown." The name of his brother Ham means "black" and "hot," and the name of his brother Japheth means "extend" and "enlargement."[55] Shem's name hints that Noah's desire was for his son to become renowned, but not for the sake of family honor. Rather, his expectation

was for his son to live a life that exalted the name of God and upheld His honor throughout the earth.

(1) Shem lived to honor God's name.

The word *honor* is derived from the Latin word honos and means "high regard or great respect."[56] This word generally refers to the state of being highly esteemed by others and the glory that comes along with it. People in this world erect monuments and set up halls of fame in order to commemorate persons who have made noteworthy contributions to the world.

A person's honor is associated with his or her name, character, and identity. Likewise, the fullness of God's awesome glory, authority, and honor is in His holy name because it contains His creation (Ps 33:6; Heb 11:3), divine providence (Rom 11:36; 1 Cor 8:6), and salvation (Acts 2:21; 4:12; Rom 10:13). Above all, the Word that proceeds from His mouth will not return empty (Isa 55:11); when God speaks, His words bear fruit. Thus, God's name has the highest authority and honor.

Isaiah 55:8–13 "...And it will be a memorial [שֵׁם, *šēm*] to the LORD, for an everlasting sign which will not be cut off."

Psalm 135:13 "Thy name [שֵׁם, *šēm*], O LORD, is everlasting, Thy remembrance, O LORD, throughout all generations."

Isaiah 42:8 "I am the LORD, that is My name [שֵׁם, *šēm*]; I will not give My glory to another, nor My praise to graven images."

Hosea 12:5 "Even the LORD, the God of hosts; the LORD is His name [שֵׁם, *šēm*]."

Just as a person is liable for the defamation of another's name or character, so, too, does God hold people liable for defamation of His great name, and for using the name of God in vain (Exod 20:7). Using the Lord's name, in vain means to mock, ridicule, or neglect His name (Gal 6:7).

Acknowledgment from the world and praise from other human beings have temporal effects. Honor received through the name of God, however, is a spring of eternal joy and blessings (Mal 4:2). Solomon's fame was great because it was "concerning the name of the Lord" (1 Kgs 10:1; 2 Chr 9:1). Therefore, those who guard the name of God with all their hearts, minds, and lives will also see their names lifted high, and will live honorable lives.

Shem also lived a faithful life, not for his own honor but rather, for the glory and honor of God's name. He lived up to fulfill the glorious title, "the God of Shem" (Gen 9:26).

(2) Shem received the testimony "Blessed be the Lord, the God of Shem" (Gen 9:26).

A particular child in a family may be considered the family's "lucky charm." The parents may say, "This child is our lucky charm because all the good things started happening to our family after this child was born!"

Likewise, Noah's exclamation, "Blessed be the Lord, the God of Shem" expressed Noah's vision in faith regarding God's continual blessings that would blossom through Shem. He sang praises with the hope that God's name would become renowned through Shem's descendants who would continue to glorify God and call upon His name. What a great honor it is for Shem to have God Almighty, the sovereign over the whole universe, declare that He would be glorified through his descendants! There can be no greater honor for any individual.

Shem's descendants continued to call on God's name just as Noah had prophesied. God was identified as the God of Abraham (a descendant of Shem), the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob; Abraham had fully passed down his legacy of faith to his children (Exod 3:6, 15; Matt 22:32; Mark 12:26; Luke 20:37; Acts 3:13; 7:32). He did precisely what God had called him to do (Gen 18:18–19).

It was prophesied that Shiloh (i.e., the Messiah) would come through Judah (Gen 49:10), the fourth of Jacob's 12 sons, whose name means "this time I will praise the Lord" (Gen 29:35). This praise began with the descendants of Shem and echoed through the later generations.

The coming Messiah has a name above all names (Phil 2:9) and is worthy to receive all the honor, glory, and praise (Rev 5:12). The name of the returning Lord is the "King of kings" and "Lord of lords," who will be renowned with glory and fame most high (1 Chr 16:27; 1 Tim 6:15; Rev 17:14; 19:16).

(3) Lamech died when Shem was 93 years old, and Methuselah died five years later, when Shem was 98 years old in the year of the flood.

✻ Organized and presented for the first time in history

Shem lived 35 years longer than Abraham did and was alive during Isaac's and Jacob's time. This was an amazing blessing of longevity. During the 600 years of his long life, he lived contemporaneously with Methuselah (eighth generation from Adam) down through to Jacob (twenty-second generation from Adam)—a total of 15 generations, including himself (Gen 5:25–32; 11:10–32; 25:7–26; 35:28; 41:46; 45:11; 47:9, 28). These 15 generations can be grouped as follows:

① Born before the flood (8th–11th generations): Methuselah, Lamech, Noah, Shem

② Born after the flood (12th–22nd generations): Arpachshad, Shelah, Eber, Peleg, Reu, Serug, Nahor, Terah, Abraham, Isaac, Jacob

12. Twelfth Generation: Arpachshad

אַרְפַּכְשַׁד (*ʾarpakšad*): boundary[57]

Arpachshad was born 1,658 years after Adam. He became the father of Shelah at the age of 35 and lived 403 more years and had other children. He died at the age of 438 (2,096 years after Adam [Gen 11:12–13; 1 Chr 1:24]). He lived 348 years contemporaneously with Noah. He lived until Abraham was 148 years old and Isaac was 48 years old.

His name is recorded in the genealogy of Jesus in Luke 3:36 as Ἀρφαξάδ **(*Arphaxad*).**

Shem had five sons after the flood: Elam, Asshur, Arpachshad, Lud, and Aram (Gen 10:1, 22). Arpachshad was the third son. The Bible enumerates the five sons and reveals that the will of God would continue to be fulfilled through the third son and not the first.

After Shem became the father of Elam and Asshur, he had a third son and named him *Arpachshad*, meaning "boundary" (Gen 10:22). In faith, Shem hoped that his blessings and spiritual boundaries would be passed down to the future generations through Arpachshad.

The genealogy in Genesis 10 does not provide an answer as to why God's will was carried on through Arpachshad. However, the Bible's description of the relationship between the chosen people of Israel and the nations of Elam and Asshur at a later point in time reveals the reason as to why these two sons were set aside from God's chosen line.

Isaac Asimov states, "The first two sons of Shem are Elam and Asshur, the eponyms of the Elamites and the Assyrians, which at the time that Genesis was reduced to writing were the most powerful nations of the 'Semitic' world."[58]

(1) The reason Shem's first and second sons were not included in the genealogy of redemptive history.

Shem's first son was Elam.

Elam (עֵילָם) is an Assyrian word meaning "high" or "highlands." Elam is the ancestor of the Elamites, who lived in the highlands located between the Persian Gulf and the Caspian Sea on the right bank of the Tigris River in the time of the ancient Near East. Due to geopolitical reasons, Elam had continuously

engaged in battles with Sumer, Babylon, Assyria, Media, Persia, and other Mesopotamian nations in the surrounding area. During Abraham's time, Chedorlaomer, the king of Elam, led an invasion into Canaan, and Abraham was forced to attack him and his allies (Shinar, Ellasar, Elam, and Goiim) with his 318 men in order to rescue Lot, whom they had taken captive (Gen 14:1–17). The Elamites, who had originally lived to the east of Mesopotamia, had quickly expanded westward to the Jordan.

The Elamites were skilled archers (Jer 49:35). As a nation, they were belligerent and militant, and the people of the world feared them (Ezek 32:24). When Assyria attacked Judah, Elam sent soldiers to assist in the destruction of Jerusalem (Isa 22:6). God declared that He would directly send plagues, pour out His anger, and send the sword to consume Elam and destroy the king and the princes who had assaulted His chosen people (Jer 49:36–38; Ezek 32:24–25).

Elam was also one of the nations that interfered with the reconstruction of the temple upon Israel's return from the Babylonian exile (Ezra 4:1–9). The former region of Elam is what is now the highlands of the Khuzestan province in the southwest part of Iran.

Shem's second son was Asshur (Assyria, Assyrians).

The name *Asshur* (אַשּׁוּר) means "a prosperous place" and is derived from the verb that means "to prosper" or "to rejoice." Assyria took advantage of every opportunity to expand and enlarge its territory; it erected the most powerful city-state of the ancient Near East. The power of the Assyrian Empire was at its peak from the ninth century BC until the seventh century BC. The capital city at the time was Assyria, but it was moved to Nineveh during the reign of King Sennacherib (705–681 BC).

After being conquered by Nimrod, the people of Assyria did not carry on the faith of Shem, but instead turned into a belligerent nation like the descendants of Ham and afflicted the chosen nation of Israel. In the phrase, "From that land he went forth into Assyria" in Genesis 10:11, the pronoun "he" refers to Nimrod, Ham's grandson (Gen 10:6–8). Nimrod was the first mighty man on the earth, and it was he who invaded the land of Asshur (Gen 10:8). He was a "mighty hunter" before the Lord, a hero mighty enough to establish four great cities (Gen 10:9, 11–12). In accordance with the meaning of his name, "rebel," he turned away from faith in God, which had been passed down from Noah, and erected the Tower of Babel. He stood on Satan's side, against the work of God.

The Assyrians had a hostile attitude toward the chosen nation of Israel. King Shalmaneser of Assyria destroyed Samaria, the capital of the northern kingdom of Israel, in 722 BC during the reign of King Hoshea (2 Kgs 18:9–10). After the conquest of the land of Israel, the Assyrians began to occupy the land and lived among the Israelites, accelerating the corruption of the Israelites (2 Kgs 17:27–33). Moreover, King Sennacherib, who had already invaded the northern kingdom of Israel, brought his army of 185,000 men down to the southern kingdom of Judah and surrounded the city of Jerusalem during King Hezekiah's reign. God, however, struck them dead (2 Kgs 18:13–19:37).

Regarding the Assyrians, God said through Isaiah, "Woe to Assyria, the rod of My anger and the staff in whose hands is My indignation" (Isa 10:5). Isaiah prophesied that judgment would eventually come upon the Assyrians because they also did not acknowledge God and were proud (Isa 10:12–16; 14:24–25).

The people of Assyria were originally of Shem's line. However, as they became mixed with the people of Nimrod, they drew further and further away from faith, eventually becoming enemies with God.[59] Thus, it is surely not by coincidence that the line of redemptive history continued through Shem's third son, Arpachshad.

(2) Arpachshad was born to Shem at the age of 100, two years after the flood, 1,658 years after Adam (Gen 11:10).

Shem was one of the eight people who witnessed God's judgment, the consequence of sins, through the great flood. After the flood, God blessed not only Noah, but also his three sons, saying, "Be fruitful and multiply, and fill the earth."

Genesis 9:1 And God blessed Noah and his sons and said to them, "Be fruitful and multiply, and fill the earth."

Genesis 9:7 And as for you, be fruitful and multiply; populate the earth abundantly and multiply in it.

Shem lived through judgment and persevered through the days of suffering in the enclosed ark. In the process, he matured spiritually to possess a God-first faith. This is evident from his actions not long after the flood when his father, Noah, became drunk with wine and lay in his tent. When his younger brother, Ham, saw his father's nakedness, he went out and spread rumors.

Genesis 9:22 And Ham, the father of Canaan, saw the nakedness of his father, and told his two brothers outside.

The word *told* in this verse is נָגַד (*nāgad*) in Hebrew, meaning "to announce," "to denounce," or "to explain" (Gen 41:24). Ham exposed his father's conduct in exaggerated detail. Shem's actions, however, were prudent and careful. He entered the room humbly, walked backwards and covered his father's nakedness, displaying the depth of his filial respect and duty (Gen 9:23).

After waking up, Noah pronounced severe judgment upon Ham's son, Canaan. Conversely, he blessed Shem, saying, "Blessed be the Lord, the God of Shem." He prophesied, "And let Canaan be his servant. May God enlarge Japheth, and let him dwell in the tents of Shem" (Gen 9:25–27). Consequently, Shem received the inheritance of faith from Noah.

(3) Shem hoped that the boundary of faith would be secured through Arpachshad.

Shem received God's grace and blessings in full and had a third son, whom he named *Arpachshad*. The meaning of the name, "boundary," hints at Shem's fervent hope that the spiritual boundary, the foundation for the work of redemption, might be established through his son.

Shem's expectation for Arpachshad to secure the boundary of faith and set up a bridgehead for the gospel is reminiscent of the time when Noah sent the dove out from the ark for the second time. It found a small resting place for the sole of its tiny foot and brought back a freshly picked olive leaf (Gen 8:8–11). At that moment, Noah realized that dry ground was finally appearing, so he breathed a sigh of relief and gained hope.

God began His work of redemption by first marking out His boundaries. He chose the small country of Israel in the land of Palestine as a foothold for His work. The chosen Israel became His own boundary and territory (John 1:11). From among all the nations that rose after the flood (Gen 10:31–32), He chose one nation for His work and made its people His own precious people (Deut 7:6; 10:15; 26:18; 32:9). The prophet Amos gives an account of the birth of the chosen nation: "You only have I chosen among all the families of the earth" (Amos 3:2). God chose Israel not because it possessed any unique qualities or by merit, but rather, by His absolute grace (Amos 9:7). Amos warned that they would not be able to escape God's fierce judgment if they forgot the grace by which they had been chosen (Amos 3:2).

At the fullness of time (Gal 4:4), God sent Jesus to the land of Israel which He had chosen and prepared from long ago to receive the Messiah. This land was rightfully His own (John 1:11). This was the boundary that He had chosen and set apart as His own since the time of Abraham, but the Son of Man had no place to rest His head when He came (Matt 8:20; Luke 9:58).

In reality, Jesus' ministry did not expand far outside of the small boundary of Israel. He spent most of His time in His land. A good example is the account of His encounter with the Canaanite woman, a Gentile (Syrophoenician [Mark 7:26]) who had traveled a long distance to bring her sick daughter to Jesus. He responded coldly to her request, saying, "I was sent only to the lost sheep of the house of Israel" (Matt 15:24). When Jesus sent His disciples out to evangelize, He instructed them, "Do not go in the way of the Gentiles, and do not enter any city of the Samaritans; but rather go to the lost sheep of the house of Israel" (Matt 10:5–6).

The size of the land of Israel was inconsequential compared to the rest of the world. However, God secured His land to act as the central ground for His work just as a bridgehead is strategically secured during a battle. Geographically, the land of Judah, which God chose, was situated at the center of the world, and connected to Europe, Africa, and Asia (Ezek 38:12). We should also strive to become God's "boundary," which He consecrates and establishes to advance His will (1 Pet 2:9).

13. Thirteenth Generation: Shelah

שֶׁלַח (*šelaḥ*): send away or sent, sprout (shoot), outstretching (undertaking)

> **Shelah was born 1,693 years after Adam. He became the father of Eber at the age of 30 and lived 403 years more and had other children. He died at the age of 433 (2,126 years after Adam [Gen 11:14–15; 1 Chr 1:24–25]). He lived 313 years contemporaneously with Noah. Shelah outlived Abraham by three years. He lived until Isaac was 78 years old and Jacob was 18 years old.**
>
> **His name is recorded in the genealogy of Jesus in Luke 3:35 as Σαλά (*Sala*).**

The name *Shelah* is derived from the Hebrew word שָׁלַח (*šālaḥ*) and means "to throw (out)," "to send," or "to spread out."

Arpachshad named his son *Shelah* with the hope that God would send godly descendants out to all parts of the world so that the power of faith may expand its reach. Accordingly, it was during Shelah's time that the descendants of Shem spread out to the different regions. God's boundaries (or central base) were secured during Arpachshad's time and enlarged during Shelah's time in order to spread the gospel to all parts of the world. This was the fulfillment of the "multiply" in God's command to "be fruitful and multiply, and fill the earth" (Gen 9:1, 7), which He had given immediately after the flood. Similarly, the chosen people of Israel, which began with one man, Abraham, whom God first called out from Ur of the Chaldeans, had multiplied greatly by the time the Israelites left Egypt. Exodus 1:7 testifies, "The sons of Israel were fruitful and increased greatly, and multiplied, and became exceedingly mighty, so that the land was filled with them."

(1) Israel was God's first boundary; however, this was expanded to encompass the Gentiles, furthering the boundaries of the gospel in accordance with Jesus' command as He ascended into heaven (Matt 28:18–20).

Another Hebrew origin for the name *Shelah* is שֶׁלַח (*šelaḥ*), from which comes the meaning "young branch," "shoot," or "new sprout." A sprouting branch is a new shoot containing the hope that one day it will grow into a large tree. Jesus is the spiritual shoot who has opened the path to salvation through His death and resurrection. Like springtime shoots that, as time goes by, sprout fresh green leaves eventually turning into a great forest before one knows it, it was Arpachshad's hope that the gospel would expand just as rapidly.

With His crucifixion and resurrection as the turning point, the work of the gospel of Jesus Christ expanded out from the Jews in the land of Judea to the lands of the Gentiles (Matt 28:18–20; Acts 1:8; 13:46–47). The time had come to gather the sheep from outside the pen (i.e., the Gentiles) to one shepherd (John 10:16). The apostle Paul was also called for this ministry—to become a vessel to hold the Gentiles (Acts 9:15). The movement of the gospel, which had begun in Jerusalem, spread to nearby Samaria and farther out to all the ends of the earth (Acts 1:8).

(2) The progression of the work from Arpachshad to Shelah corresponds to the growing gospel movement during the early church era after Jesus' resurrection and ascension.

It is important for us to examine how the boundaries of the gospel were enlarged after the advent of the Holy Spirit upon the 120 people during Pentecost. The unbelieving land of Israel became a land of the gospel through the small group of 120 people who had gathered in Mark's upper room. Additionally, the great expansion and growth of the Word of God began when these believers were sent out to witness the gospel (Acts 2:41, 47; 4:4; 5:14, 28; 6:7; 9:31; 11:21; 12:24; 19:20). The gospel yielded abundant fruit

and increased all around the world (Col 1:5–6).

The growth and expansion of the gospel movement during the early church era foreshadow the Word movement in the end time. The task of spreading the gospel has been entrusted to us today (Matt 24:14). As people entrusted with the Word of God (Rom 3:2), we must diligently teach the Word to our children, neighbors, and friends until the earth is filled with the knowledge of the Lord. Our hope and prayer is to see the day when everyone in this world, from the least to the greatest, comes to the knowledge of God (Isa 11:9; Jer 31:31–34; Hab 2:14; Heb 8:10–11; 10:16–18).

Excursus 5

Perspective on Cainan

(❋ Organized and presented for the first time in history)

Noah (10th), Shem (11th), Arphaxad (12th), Cainan, Shelah (13th) (Luke 3:35–36)

Arpachshad (Arphaxad), the twelfth generation from Adam, fathered Shelah at the age of 35. Arpachshad lived 403 years after fathering Shelah and had other children (Gen 11:12–13). In the biblical genealogies, there are four places that state that Arpachshad fathered Shelah (Gen 10:24; 11:12; 1 Chr 1:18, 24). In all four places, however, there is no mention of Cainan (Kenan) between Arpachshad and Shelah. This is because Cainan was not recorded in the original Hebrew text. The only place where Cainan is mentioned between Arpachshad and Shelah is in the Gospel of Luke. How should we view this?

I. Cainan is Missing in the Old Testament.

1. **The genealogy in Genesis 10 lists the patriarchs in the order of Noah, Shem, Arpachshad, Shelah, Eber, and Peleg (Gen 10:1–25). This shows that Arpachshad was the father of Shelah.**

   Genesis 10:24 And Arpachshad became the father of Shelah; and Shelah became the father of Eber.

2. **Genesis 11:10–20 also lists Noah, Shem, Arpachshad, Shelah, Eber, Peleg, Reu, Serug, Nahor, Terah, and Abram.**

   Genesis 11:12–13 And Arpachshad lived thirty-five years, and became the father of Shelah; [13]and Arpachshad lived four hundred and three years after he became the father of Shelah, and he had other sons and daughters.

However, the genealogy in the Gospel of Luke includes Cainan. The genealogy in the Gospel of Luke lists the patriarchs in the order of Noah, Shem, Arphaxad, *Cainan*, Shelah, Heber, Peleg, Reu, Serug, Nahor, Terah, and Abraham (Luke 3:34–36).

II. The Relationship between Arpachshad, Cainan, and Shelah

The Old Testament genealogies in Genesis 10:24 and Genesis 11:12–13 omit Cainan, but Luke 3:36 includes him. Since both the Old and the New Testaments are inerrant, we may speculate as follows:

1. **After Arpachshad, the birthright must have been transferred to Cainan and then to Shelah.**
2. **Therefore, it is possible that Cainan and Shelah were twins.**

Of the two sons of Arpachshad, Cainan was the older and Shelah was the younger. Arpachshad fathered both sons probably at the age of 35.

> **Genesis 11:12** And Arpachshad lived thirty-five years, and became the father of Shelah.

Why the difference between the genealogy in Genesis and the genealogy in Luke? Arpachshad's birthright was transferred from the firstborn, Cainan, to the younger son, Shelah. Although there is no mention of this in the Bible, we may conjecture that Cainan committed some sin that caused him to lose his birthright. As soon as he lost his birthright, it was transferred to his brother, Shelah. Interestingly, the apocryphal book *Jubilees* offers the following explanation for how Cainan sinned:

> **Jubilees 8:2–3** And Cainan grew, and his father taught him writing, and he went to seek for himself a place where he might seize for himself a city. [3]And he found a writing which former (generations) had carved on the rock, and he read what was thereon, and he transcribed it and sinned owing to it; for it contained the teaching of the Watchers in accordance with which they used to observe the omens of the sun and moon and stars in all the signs of heaven.

Although we cannot accept all the apocryphal writings as the truth, we can at least conclude that for some reason Cainan had forsaken God and lost his birthright. This is a plausible reason for the omission of his name from the genealogies of the patriarchs.

3. **It appears that the Gospel of Luke recorded the genealogy according to the order of the possession of the birthright: "the son of Shelah, the son of Cainan, the son of Arphaxad."**

The genealogy in Genesis omits the transference of the birthright from Cainan to Shelah and lists Shelah right after Arpachshad.

There are other similar instances in the Bible. For example, Esau and Jacob, twins born to Isaac and Rebekah, experienced a similar struggle. Isaac's birthright rightly belonged to Esau, for he was the firstborn, but Esau despised it and sold it for a bowl of cooked stew (Gen 25:27–34). Furthermore, Jacob deceived Esau and received the blessing of the firstborn (Gen 27:25–40). Based on the transference of the birthright, the genealogy should read: Abraham, Isaac, Esau, Jacob. However, the genealogy in the Gospel of Matthew reads: Abraham, Isaac, Jacob.

With this perspective on Cainan, the inclusion of Cainan in Luke 3 has no impact on the reckoning of the generations in Genesis 5 and Genesis 11.

14. Fourteenth Generation: Eber

עֵבֶר (*ʿēber*): the one who crossed over

Eber was born 1,723 years after Adam. He became the father of Peleg at the age of 34. He lived 430 more years and had other children. He died at the age of 464 (2,187 years after Adam [Gen 11:16–17; 1 Chr 1:25]). He lived 283 years contemporaneously with Noah. Eber outlived Abraham by 64 years. He lived until Isaac was 139 years old and Jacob was 79 years old.

His name is recorded in the genealogy of Jesus in Luke 3:35 as Ἔβερ (*Eber*).

The name *Eber* derives its meaning from the Hebrew word עָבַר (*ʿăbar*), which means "to pass over" or "to cross over." Thus, "Eber" means "one who crossed over" or "region across or beyond." The meaning of his name hints of his crossing over the Euphrates River from the land of sin and embarking on a walk of faith.

The word *Hebrew* is derived from the same root word as *Eber*, indicating that Eber is an ancestor of the Hebrew nation. The Hebrews followed in the steps of their ancestors, Abraham and Eber, and crossed the Euphrates to separate themselves from the sinful land (Gen 14:13).

The Bible makes a peculiar statement regarding Eber: "And also to Shem, the father of all the children

of Eber" (Gen 10:21). John Calvin emphasizes the importance of Eber: "Moses, being about to speak of the sons of Shem, makes a brief introduction, which he had not done in reference to the others."[60]

The Bible highlights Eber's significance by praising him even before enumerating the descendants in Shem's genealogy. Arpachshad and Shelah were also Shem's descendants, but they were set aside, and only the children of Eber were described as descending from Shem.

The first purpose of this verse is to praise the merits of Eber's faith and call attention to Eber immediately after Shem. Furthermore, Genesis 10:21 can be interpreted as "and all the children of Eber are born of Shem," awarding value to his descendants' faith also. God's title had changed from "the God of Shem" (Gen 9:26) to "the God of the children of Eber" (Gen 10:21), focusing more specifically on the children of Eber. In this manner, Eber is highlighted as an important link to Abraham, the father of faith, in the line of Shem (Gen 11:10–27).

(1) Although Eber enjoyed the greatest longevity among the direct descendants of Shem, there was a trend of decreasing human life span to about 200 years after the generation of his son Peleg.

The abrupt decrease in human life span by half is directly related to sin (Prov 10:27).

> Psalm 55:23 But Thou, O God, wilt bring them down to the pit of destruction; men of bloodshed and deceit will not live out half their days. But I will trust in Thee.

Eber enjoyed the blessing of longevity because he had protected his faith and distanced himself from sin even as the perverse movement to build the Tower of Babel had been well under way. In contrast to Eber, the life span of his descendants was cut in half, as a curse, because they did not follow their ancestors across the river. Rather, they intermingled with the descendants of Ham to participate in building the Tower of Babel (Gen 10:6–10; 11:1–9).

(2) Eber crossed the Euphrates River and established the kingdom of Ebla.[61]

Many people turned away from God during the time that the Tower of Babel was being built. It was at this time that Eber crossed over the Euphrates River from Mesopotamia going toward Haran and erected the large city of Ebla to maintain their orthodox faith in God. As a godly descendant, Eber crossed the river and waved the banner of spiritual reformation and religious purification.

According to the clay tablets discovered around this region, the kingdom of Ebla was a highly civilized city-state established in the region known today as Aleppo in Syria. It is believed that Eber was its founding king and that the city-state had previously existed as a small city, but was established as a large city-state during Eber's time. Thus, Eber, the godly descendant from the line of Shem, became its first king and the kingdom was named after him. According to the clay tablets, the kingdom of Ebla flourished in the arts and academic fields and reached its peak around 2300 BC when Eber ruled. In fact, records of their tribute receipts from nations in the Euphrates region were excavated from this region, giving credence to the theory that the kingdom of Ebla was the most powerful kingdom in the ancient Near East of that time.

According to the calculation of the years in the Bible, Eber was born 1,723 years after Adam (c. 2391 BC). He became the father of Peleg 1,757 years after Adam and lived until 2,187 years after Adam (1927 BC). Thus, the years of the kingdom of Ebla coincide with Eber's time.

This information was discovered when over 15,000 clay tablets were excavated from an abandoned region in the northwestern part of Syria and subsequently deciphered. The deciphering process was made possible with the excavation of the world's greatest Sumerian-Eblaite dictionaries, containing some 1,000 words. Yong-Kuk Wone wrote in his revised edition of *The Pentateuch*, "According to the tablets, the dominion of the kingdom of Ebla expanded to the south, encompassing the entire area of Palestine, Syria from Lebanon's most modern history, and Sinai; to its west, it expanded to Cyprus; and to the east, Mesopotamia. The tablets also mention some cities of the ancient Near East, like Gaza, Megiddo,

Melchizedek, Sodom and Gomorrah." Based on this evidence, the kingdom that Eber had established was a vast territory with great influence as designated by the name "kingdom of Ebla."[62]

(3) The name of the river that Eber and Abraham crossed is "Euphrates."

Amazingly, *Euphrates* means "abundant" or "storage house of heaven." During harvest time, wheat is gathered into the barn, but the chaff is thrown into the unquenchable fire. Likewise, only people like Eber who set themselves apart from the place of sin by crossing the Euphrates River will become the spiritual wheat that enters heaven's storehouse. Those who remain in the sinful world to partake in building the Tower of Babel are like the chaff and cannot enter heaven.

> Matthew 3:12 And His winnowing fork is in His hand, and He will thoroughly clear His threshing floor; and He will gather His wheat into the barn, but He will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire.

God's judgment will also fall upon the "Euphrates" in the last days. Among the seven trumpet plagues, the sixth will fall upon the "great river Euphrates" (Rev 9:13–15).

> Revelation 9:13–14 I heard a voice . . . saying to the sixth angel who had the trumpet, "Release the four angels who are bound at the great river Euphrates."

According to Revelation, the sixth bowl will be poured out upon "the great river, the Euphrates."

> Revelation 16:12 And the sixth angel poured out his bowl upon the great river, the Euphrates; and its water was dried up, that the way might be prepared for the kings from the east.

According to Jeremiah 51:61–64, the book that declares Babylon's destruction was thrown into the Euphrates. Thus, the great tribulation of the end time will be poured out upon the Euphrates and those who cross the river and come out of the tribulation will survive.

(4) The "God of Eber" became the "God of Abraham" later.

Like Eber, Abraham crossed the Euphrates to enter the land of Canaan when he left Ur of the Chaldeans. In doing so, Abraham completely departed from his ancestors Peleg, Reu, Serug, Nahor, and Terah, who had intermingled with the sinful world and plunged into darkness after the time of Eber (Gen 11:31–12:4; Josh 24:2–3; Acts 7:2–4).

Abraham's contemporaries identified Abraham as a "Hebrew" (Gen 14:13), meaning "one who crossed the river," acknowledging that he was a descendant of Eber. Both *Eber* (עֵבֶר) and *Hebrew* (עִבְרִי) are derived from the verb *ʿăbar* (עָבַר) and have the same meaning. Abraham, who was Eber's seventh generation, reconnected the branch of orthodox faith that had been severed after Eber. Therefore, the "God of Shem" became the "God of Eber," and now the "God of Abraham."

15. Fifteenth Generation: Peleg

פֶּלֶג (*peleg*): division, separate, split

Peleg was born 1,757 years after Adam. He became the father of Reu at the age of 30. He lived 209 years more and had other children. He died at the age of 239 (1,996 years after Adam [Gen 11:18–19; 1 Chr 1:25]). His life span was shortened to about half compared to Eber's time. Thus, Peleg was the first one to die among the ten generations after the flood. He lived 239 years contemporaneously with Noah.

His name is recorded in the genealogy of Jesus in Luke 3:35 as Φάλεκ (*Phalek*).

The name *Peleg* originates from the Hebrew word פֶּלֶג (*pālag*), which means "to split" or "to divide." His name thus means "division," "separation," and "split." Genesis 10:25 confirms that the world was divided during his time in accordance with the meaning of his name. The godly man Eber probably named his son *Peleg* with the hope that he would live a holy life, separated and consecrated from the sinful world. Peleg's life, unfortunately, fell short of his father's expectations.

(1) It was during Peleg's time that languages were confused and mankind became scattered as a result of the construction of the Tower of Babel (Gen 11:1–9).

The phrase "for in his days the earth was divided" in Genesis 10:25 describes the result of the construction of the Tower of Babel and the confusion of language by God. Since it was impossible to build such a complex structure without being able to communicate with one another, their plans were thwarted and they were scattered abroad (Gen 11:9). This is how the city in which the tower was being built earned its name.

> Genesis 11:9 Therefore its name was called Babel, because there the Lord confused the language of the whole earth; and from there the Lord scattered them abroad over the face of the whole earth.

Even after experiencing the great flood due to the magnitude of their sins, men forgot about the fierceness of God's judgment and stirred up His wrath once again with the construction of the Tower of Babel.

(2) The most peculiar characteristic of Peleg's time was that the human life span was shortened to half of what it had been during his father Eber's time. Peleg was the first one to die among the ten generations of patriarchs since Noah.

✻ The reason for the shortened life span during the time of Peleg closely examined and presented for the first time in history Eber lived 464 years, but Peleg lived only 239 years. Reu lived 239 years, and Serug lived 230 years. They did not live much over 200 years and did not enjoy the longevity that their ancestors did; rather, they lived only about half the life span of their ancestors. After the flood, Peleg died suddenly, before all the other godly patriarchs in the line of Shem who were still alive and healthy. The shortening of life span during Peleg's time indicates that Peleg and his descendants did not fear God, but rather sinned before Him (Ps 55:23; Prov 10:27).

> Ecclesiastes 8:13 But it will not be well for the evil man and he will not lengthen his days like a shadow, because he does not fear God.

Judging from Genesis 10:25, "for in his days the earth was divided," the construction of the tower was the great sin of challenging God. By remembering the dreadful judgment that destroyed mankind through the flood, man should have severed himself from sin and drawn closer to God. Instead, they gathered all human wisdom to build the tower in an attempt to escape God's judgment in case there was to be another (Gen 11:3–4). The underlying message of this challenge against God was that they believed His judgment by the flood to have been unjust. Even Peleg, the offspring of godly Eber, had fallen into the temptation of making concessions for worldly gain and power; ultimately, he also participated in the construction of the

tower and committed a grave sin against God.

Sung Il Kim, in his writings about the ancient biblical times, notes that Nimrod had lifted his name high among his followers and wanted to construct the tower in order to keep them from rebelling against him. However, because it was impossible to do so without the sophisticated construction skills of Shem's descendants, they, too, must have taken part in this work.[63]

After the flood, the tides of sin and corruption swept away even the godly descendants of Shem. The situation was similar to Noah's time, when sin had so filled the world that the sons of God saw the beauty of the daughters of men and intermarried with them (Gen 6:2). The fall of the descendants of Seth truly brought sorrow and pain to God's heart, to the point that He was sorry that He had created them. This was the deciding factor for the judgment of the flood (Gen 6:5–7). Likewise, Peleg, though he was supposed to carry on the faith in the line of Shem, stood in the path of sin. But for God's covenant of the rainbow given after the flood, this charge was great enough to warrant yet another catastrophe similar in magnitude to that of the great flood. Therefore, the sudden decrease in the average life span during Peleg's time can be interpreted as a form of God's judgment upon man. Even Noah (Adam's tenth generation) outlived Peleg (Adam's fifteenth generation) by ten years. Peleg's life was shortened because he took part in sinning against God.

(3) Peleg lived contemporaneously with Abraham (his sixth generation) for 48 years.

According to the chart of the chronology of the patriarchs, ten generations of ancestors in the line of Shem, from Noah to Terah, were all alive during Abraham's lifetime. It is probable that Noah, Shem, Arpachshad, Shelah, and Eber had already migrated toward Haran by the time of Abraham.[64] Hence, Abraham most likely lived with Peleg, Reu, Serug, Nahor, and Terah until he left Ur of the Chaldeans.

At the age of 48, Abraham witnessed the unprecedented early death of his ancestor Peleg at the age of 239. The next year, when Abraham was 49 years old, he again witnessed the early death of his grandfather Nahor at the age of 148. God had forsaken them because they had strayed too far away from their faith. Through their deaths, Abraham must have come to a great realization and spiritual awakening on many matters. While Abraham was living among these ancestors, God called him out and consecrated him.

16. Sixteenth Generation: Reu

רְעוּ (*rĕʿû*): friend, neighbor[65]

> **Reu was born 1,787 years after Adam. He became the father of Serug at the age of 32. He lived 207 more years and had other children. He died at the age of 239 (2,026 years after Adam [Gen 11:20–21; 1 Chr 1:25–26]). He lived 219 years contemporaneously with Noah.**
>
> **His name is recorded in the genealogy of Jesus in Luke 3:35 as Ῥαγαύ (*Rhagau*).**

The name *Reu* is derived from the noun רְעִי (*rĕʿî*), meaning "pasture" or "pasturage," and the verb רָעָה (*rāʿâ*), meaning "to pasture," "to tend," "to associate with," and "to be a friend of."

Unstable times followed after the departure of Eber because there was no spiritual leader to provide guidance. Realizing this, Peleg named his son *Reu*, hoping that he would develop good relationships in this world and find success. Instead of teaching his son to become a friend of God, he foolishly desired for his son to develop good social relationships with people of the sinful world.

(1) Reu probably lived a nomadic life.

According to the origin of the name *Reu*, meaning "to pasture," "to tend," or "to graze," he must have

lived a nomadic life. Raising livestock and farming were the two greatest means of livelihood in the ancient agrarian societies.

Characteristic of nomadic life, people migrated from one place to another in search of water and grazing fields. They generally engaged in vast migrations in the spring or summer season and even moved around within pastures. A great migration probably occurred after the incident of the Tower of Babel, and it was probably at this time that they chose to live their lives as nomads. Reu's dedication to this kind of life is evident in his name. He most likely migrated from place to place in search of green pastures as he raised livestock and secured grounds for his life.

The lives of saints on this earth also involve continuous migration. The Bible describes such people as "strangers" (1 Pet 2:11) and "sojourners" (1 Chr 29:15). The word *sojourn* refers to a "temporary stay." Saints are on this earth temporarily; eventually they will move on to their eternal home in heaven (Heb 11:13–16).

(2) Reu was faithful in his friendships with other people.

The name *Reu* also has a derived meaning of "to associate with" or "to be a friend of." Before the incident of the Tower of Babel, everyone lived in one community and spoke one language.

Genesis 11:1 Now the whole earth used the same language and the same words.

However, God squelched their foolish rebellion by confusing their language and scattering them across the earth. Human beings exist within relationships; relationships are established mainly through communication; and language is considered the main means of communication. The confusion of languages was thus a detrimental impediment because it not only affected daily conversation, but also led to differences in ways of thinking, eventually resulting in disorder.

By raising the level of differences, misunderstandings, and hostility amongst the people, God nullified their plans to challenge Him. This probably led to the formation of new communities as people began to migrate from place to place looking for others who spoke similar languages. Within these new communities, new relationships may have developed between people who shared similar interests. Presumably, establishing new relationships and ties was the first priority in the newly founded communities. Thus, Reu's name is an accurate reflection of a time in which there was a desperate need for friends who shared common interests and the same spirit.

However, it is essential to remember that friendships outside of God are Satan's snares: they bind saints' down in the sinful world. If Reu had focused on holding hands with God and reconciling his relationship with Him, he would not have been so caught up with earthly relationships. It would have been easier for him to leave the land of his dwelling behind, just as Abraham had done, in order to begin a new life as a true sojourner to restore his faith.

What became of mankind after being scattered across the earth? As people settled down and built communities, they began to once again erect invisible cities of sin. People who were accustomed to sinning drew closer to one another in a special bond; they joined forces and built up their strength for the purpose of opposing and sinning against God.

(3) A true believer must be worthy of being called a "friend of God."

Eber and other godly ancestors from the line of Shem most likely crossed the river and established a holy community of faith (i.e., the kingdom of Ebla) during Reu's lifetime. Peleg and his descendants perhaps were confident that they could continue their lives of faith without crossing the river to the other side. However, they could not maintain the purity of faith in a humanistic society, which was full of idolatry. Thus, not too long after the incident of the Tower of Babel, around the time of Abraham, the tides of evil provoked the godly descendants of Shem to corruption and idolatry (Josh 24:2, 14).

These were the circumstances in which God called Abraham. Just as God had called Noah to build the

ark at a time when sin had filled the earth, so, too, did He call Abraham in times of great apostasy in order to establish His kingdom.

In response to God's calling, Abraham forfeited all that was life to him and severed his family ties and friendships without hesitation (Gen 12:1; Acts 7:3). He did not know where he was headed (Heb 11:8), but he obeyed God's calling (Gen 12:4) and began his new life as a sojourner. Peleg, Reu, Serug and Nahor had not been able to do this, but Abraham was resolute. He gave up his friendship with this world and yearned for a close friendship with God (Jas 4:4). As a reward, he gained the title "friend of God" (Ps 25:14) and became the only person in the Bible to earn such a noble title (2 Chr 20:7; Isa 41:8; Jas 2:23). We must ask ourselves whether we are friends with this world or with God.

17. Seventeenth Generation: Serug

שְׂרוּג (*śĕrûg*): vine-shoot,[66] firm strength,[67] bow[68]

Serug was born 1,819 years after Adam. He became the father of Nahor at the age of 30. He lived 200 more years and had other children. He died at the age of 230 (2,049 years after Adam [Gen 11:22–23; 1 Chr 1:26]). He lived 187 years contemporaneously with Noah.

His name is recorded in the genealogy of Jesus in Luke 3:35 as Σερούχ (*Serouch*).

The name *Serug* (שְׂרוּג) originates from the word שָׂרַג (*śārag*), which means "to mesh together," "to be intertwined," and "to intertwine themselves."[68] The purpose of meshing together and intertwining is to build strength. Tendrils growing on walls are strong and sturdy because they have very many well-intertwined branches growing out to the sides. An arrow fitted onto the bow of an archer also symbolizes strength. Thus, Reu named his son *Serug* probably with the hope that his community would be strengthened, which would have been important in order to survive in the chaotic world after the language had been confused post-Tower of Babel.

This strength, however, was neither spiritual strength nor strength from above; it was human strength built by intertwining with the world and taking part in it.

(1) Serug relied totally on his own power and strength.

This is evident from the derived meaning of his name—"arrow."

① In the Bible, arrows were used as offensive weapons in battle. The Bible speaks of bows and arrows in relation to wars and battles: "the bow of war" (Zech 9:10), "the bow of battle" (Zech 10:4), "bow of Elam, the finest of their might" (Jer 49:35), "he who sat on it had a bow . . . and he went out conquering, and to conquer" (Rev 6:2), and "[men] who shot with bow, and were skillful in battle" (1 Chr 5:18).

② It was common for those who had fallen away from the line of faith to become archers or belligerent. Shem's first son Elam was one of the finest archers (Jer 49:35). Ishmael, the son of Abraham's maidservant, was an archer (Gen 21:20), and Isaac's son Esau also hunted with bow and arrow (Gen 27:3). All of them were aggressive and militant and gave birth to belligerent nations that attacked and afflicted the chosen people of God later in history.

It appears that Serug possessed nothing that could help him settle in the land immediately after the Tower of Babel incident. Because threats from foreign nations were commonplace, in all likelihood, Serug built military power in preparation for war and used bows and arrows as weapons. Instead of

arming himself with faith in God, he acted as the Gentile nations did and sought to protect himself by building a unified military force armed with bows and arrows.

Isaiah prophesied about those who do not seek the Lord but instead rely on strong nations, taking comfort in large numbers of horsemen and chariots. He proclaimed that they will be cursed and destroyed (Isa 31:1–3) because they, too, are neither spirit nor God, but are mere flesh.

(2) A true believer must rely on God's strength.

A soldier may prepare for battle with swords and spears, but all these instruments of war mean nothing without God because victory belongs to Him (Prov 21:30–31). The battle is the Lord's (1 Sam 17:47), and His salvation is not based on external factors (1 Sam 14:6). At times, the Lord Himself fights battles for His people (Exod 15:3; 14:13–14).

Well aware of this, the psalmist confessed, "For I will not trust in my bow" (Ps 44:6). There are so many things that seem impossible when done by our own human strength, although they are ostensibly achievable at the outset. Experience has proven time and time again that things do not work out as easily as we think. Human strength eventually succumbs to greater powers. A believer must trust in the power and might that come from the Word of God and sincerely seek His grace (Acts 19:20; Heb 4:12). The joy of the Lord is the strength of His people (Neh 8:10). He fills those who believe and trust in His Word with amazing new strength so that they can overcome any crisis.

Psalm 119:133 Establish my footsteps in Thy word, and do not let any iniquity have dominion over me.
Isaiah 40:31 Yet those who wait for the Lord will gain new strength; they will mount up with wings like eagles, they will run and not get tired, they will walk and not become weary.
Zechariah 4:6 Then he answered and said to me, "This is the word of the Lord to Zerubbabel saying, 'Not by might nor by power, but by My Spirit,' says the Lord of hosts."

18. Eighteenth Generation: Nahor

נָחוֹר (*nāḥôr*): to snort, to blow out[70]

Nahor was born 1,849 years after Adam. He became the father of Terah at the age of 29. He lived 119 more years and had other children. He died at the age of 148 (1,997 years after Adam [Gen 11:24–25; 1 Chr 1:26]). He lived the shortest life among all 20 generations of patriarchs. He lived 148 years contemporaneously with Noah.

His name is recorded in the genealogy of Jesus in Luke 3:34 as Ναχώρ (*Nachor*).

The name *Nahor* (נָחוֹר) means "to be out of breath," "to pant," and "to snort." The root of this word is (נַחַר)(*nahar*), which means "snorting." Judging from the fact that Peleg lived 239 years, Reu 239 years, Serug 230 years, and Terah 205 years, we can conclude that Nahor, who died at the age of 148, did not fully live out his years. He must have been cursed by God and must have experienced sudden death from an accident or disease. His sudden death was probably a shock to his family and the patriarchs in the line of Shem.

(1) Nahor's life appears to have been shortened due to sin.

Peleg was the first to die among the ten generations after the flood, but Nahor lived the shortest life. He died suddenly, only a year after Peleg, at the age of 148. In the Bible, sudden deaths are associated with sin (Job 22:15–16; Ps 55:23; Prov 10:27; Eccl 7:17; 8:13). The Bible presents two cases in which people suddenly perish.

First, the proud will perish.

Proverbs 29:1 A man who hardens his neck after much reproof will suddenly be broken beyond remedy.

Second, liars will perish.

Proverbs 6:12–15 A worthless person, a wicked man, is the one who walks with a false mouth, [13]who winks with his eyes, who signals with his feet, who points with his fingers; [14]who with perversity in his heart devises evil continually, who spreads strife. [15]Therefore his calamity will come suddenly; instantly he will be broken, and there will be no healing.

Nahor was enjoying the prime of his life when he was struck with a plague and immediately perished. The meaning of his name indicates that he had dedicated his whole life to being preoccupied or obsessed with something. Whether it was in terms of wealth or honor, he probably dreamed of being great and stopped at nothing to achieve his goals. He poured out his wealth, time, and youth into the world. In today's terms, he had made it big in his prime, whether it was in regard to his business or fame. He found satisfaction in his own calculations and was deceived by his own wit. Ultimately, he was so engrossed in the secular life style—with focus on wealth, honor, and fame—that he lost himself and thoroughly lost sight of the importance of his spirit and life.

(2) Nahor was probably a man of greed, deeply immersed in secularism.

In accordance with Proverbs 28:16, Nahor would have enjoyed longevity if he had hated greed. However, his life came to an abrupt end because he could not overcome his greed.

Proverbs 28:16 A leader who is a great oppressor lacks understanding, but he who hates unjust gain will prolong his days.

In Luke 12:15, Jesus said, "Be on your guard against every form of greed." In Ephesians 5:3, Paul said, "But do not let immorality or any impurity or greed even be named among you." Greed leads to all sorts of lies. It even leads to forsaking God or using Him to achieve selfish desires. At times, it manipulates a heart devoted to faith for evil purposes, filling it with the greed of the flesh, which is idolatry (Col 3:5). Nahor had this kind of greed.

Although Nahor probably expended all his energy to achieve his goals and busied himself traveling to all parts of the world, the result was futile because God suddenly took his soul back. Nahor boasted as if he possessed the whole world, but he was a fool who lost himself in the end (Matt 16:26; Luke 9:25). In Luke 12:20, Jesus deplored such fools: "You fool! This very night your soul is required of you; and now who will own what you have prepared?"

God would have been greatly pleased if Nahor had expended all his energy to guard his faith, consecrate himself holy in this world, and battle against the sinful world. The principle of faith based on the fact that we came into this world naked (Job 1:21; Eccl 5:15; 1 Tim 6:7–9) dictates that we become accustomed to leaving things behind constantly when we move to a new place. Nahor, however, found satisfaction only when honor, wealth, and riches adorned him; he felt comfort and great joy when he placed his trust in them and looked upon them. This was why he was so busy all his life, panting and gasping in order to satisfy his desires.

The meaning of Nahor's name reveals no trace of godliness. It only shows that he had lived his life totally separated and alienated from God. God said in Genesis 6:3 that the end of such a person is just flesh, from which the spirit of God has left. Although Nahor confessed that he believed, his life was immersed in sensuality and hedonism, from which God is absent.

The apostle Paul said that the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all those who are ungodly, unrighteous, and more detestable than unbelievers (Rom 1:18). His indictment of heathens found in Romans 1:21–32 is as follows:

Even though they knew God, they did not give thanks (1:21).
Even though they knew God, they became futile in their speculations (1:21).
Even though they knew God, they became fools without wisdom (1:22).

Even though they knew God, they exchanged His glory for idols (1:23).
Even though they knew God, they exchanged the truth for a lie (1:25).
Even though they knew God, they were filled with degrading and indecent thoughts (1:26–27).
Even though they knew God, they did not see fit to acknowledge God any longer (1:28).
Even though they knew God, they planned only evil and were ungrateful (1:29–31).
Even though they knew that such practices are worthy of death, they not only continued to do the same without feeling any shame, but also gave hearty approval to those who practice them (1:32).

It is warned that the wrath of God will be revealed from heaven against all ungodliness of men who suppress the truth in unrighteousness (Rom 1:18).

This is exactly what happened to Nahor. If God takes away the breath of life as He did with Adam, man will pant away and come to the end of life regardless of how great his possessions may be (Gen 2:7).

The corruption of the descendants in the godly line of Shem accelerated with the passage of time: Reu placed more importance on human relationships than on his relationship with God; Serug trusted in his own strength; and Nahor's life was immersed in secularism and greed. It was not because they did not know God. Instead, they completely forsook their faith and tragically fell into worshiping detestable idols (Josh 24:2, 15). They were completely corrupted and relapsed into sinful lifestyle based on fleshly desires.

They followed the desire of the flesh that stood against the Holy Spirit and turned them away from the Word of truth (Gal 5:17). This is the act of sowing two types of seeds in a vineyard (Deut 22:9), making the ox and the donkey plow together (Deut 22:10), and mixing wool and linen together (Deut 22:11) represents a detestable faith that attempts to bind believers with nonbelievers, Christ with Belial, and the temple of God with idols (2 Cor 6:14–16).

We must do away with greed, which is idolatry (Col 3:5), and boldly remove the carnal faith that has been mixed with the greed of this world. As God's people, if we pant, it should be from working zealously to fulfill His will.

19. Nineteenth Generation: Terah

תֶּרַח (*terah*): to stay, to delay

Terah was born 1,878 years after Adam. He became the father of Abram at the age of 70. He lived 135 more years and died at the age of 205 (2,083 years after Adam [Gen 11:26–32; 1 Chr 1:26–27]). He lived 128 years contemporaneously with Noah.

His name is recorded in the genealogy of Jesus in Luke 3:34 as Θάρα (*Thara*).

The name *Terah* (תֶּרַח) means "to stay" or "to delay." He left Ur of the Chaldeans with Abraham and moved to Haran en route to the land of Canaan, but he tarried in Haran (Gen 11:31–32). He died 40 years before Abraham in the land of Haran. He was the nineteenth generation from Adam, and he lived 128 years contemporaneously with Noah, the tenth generation, although this does not mean that he lived with Noah in the same locale during those 128 years.

(1) Terah was an idol worshiper (Josh 24:2–5, 14–15).

Terah was a descendant in the line of faith, having inherited the faith from Noah, Shem, and Eber. In truth, although he boasted of the faith of his ancestors, he became so deeply immersed in idolatry that his own faith shook from its roots. Joshua 24:2 specifically states, "From ancient times your fathers lived beyond the River, namely, Terah, the father of Abraham and the father of Nahor, and they served other gods."

(2) Terah left Ur of the Chaldeans, the city of idols, but he settled in Haran.

> Genesis 11:31 And Terah took Abram his son, and Lot the son of Haran, his grandson, and Sarai his daughter-in-law, his son Abram's wife; and they went out together from Ur of the Chaldeans in order to enter the land of Canaan; and they went as far as Haran, and settled there.

The chief event noted in Terah's genealogy in Genesis 11:27–32 is Abraham's departure from Ur of the Chaldeans for the great journey to the land of Canaan. This was the dramatic scene where God totally separated Abraham from the home of evil where the Tower of Babel had been built so that He might use him.

God appeared to Abraham in Ur of the Chaldeans as the God of glory and commanded him, "Depart from your country and your relatives, and come into the land that I will show you" (Acts 7:2–3). Apparently, when Terah heard about the encounter from Abraham, he got caught up in the grandeur and enthusiasm of the calling. Terah took an even greater initiative to obey the calling by taking Abraham and leaving with him from Ur of the Chaldeans. Genesis 11:31 states, "Terah took Abram his son, and Lot the son of Haran, his grandson, and Sarai his daughter-in-law . . . and they went out together from Ur of the Chaldeans." The unfortunate part was that Terah did not enter the land of Canaan. He died in Haran at the age of 205 (Gen 11:32). Terah's life was true to the meaning of his name: "to delay." While Terah and Abraham were tarrying in the land of Haran, God appeared to Abraham once again and commanded, "Go forth from your country, and from your relatives and from your father's house, to the land which I will show you" (Gen 12:1). This time, Abraham fully obeyed and departed from Haran for the land of Canaan (Gen 12:5). From this point, Abraham became the focal point of God's new work of salvation.

(3) After Terah, Abraham came to the forefront of the history of redemption.

The genealogy of Shem in Genesis 11 lists who fathered whom and at what age he had children (Gen 11:10–26). However, unlike the genealogy in Genesis 5, it does not list how many years each ancestor had lived before he died. In Terah's case, however, this information is provided in order to emphasize his death.

> Genesis 11:32 And the days of Terah were two hundred and five years; and Terah died in Haran.

Genesis 11 concludes with the death of Terah. The sound of the Tower of Babel being built up—the sound of betrayal and opposition against God—was now silenced. The odor from the carnal acts of the supposed descendants of faith (e.g., Peleg, Reu, Serug, and Nahor) was gone. It had faded away and come to an end with Terah's death. Now, there is only one man, Abraham, who appears on the front line of the history of redemption.

In a world where even the descendants of faith (i.e., of Shem) were tainted by idol worship, God found one man, Abraham, and urgently called him out. After the Tower of Babel incident, mankind fell into a mire of sin so great that God's work of salvation was almost cut off. With the death of Terah, however, darkness that had loomed over the line of Shem was lifted, and a new work of salvation began through Abraham.

The "God of Shem" (Gen 9:26) became the "God of Eber" (Gen 10:21), and then, He was the "God of Abraham." Ham's sin after the flood had cast a pall of dark clouds over the line of faith, but the words of hope, "Blessed be the Lord, the God of Shem," were fulfilled when Abraham was singled out from the line of Shem. He opened wide the path of salvation for all mankind.

20. Twentieth Generation: Abraham

אַבְרָהָם (*'abrāhām*): father of the multitude,
father of nations

Abraham was born 1,948 years after Adam. He became the father of Isaac, the covenantal son, at the age of 100. He died at the age of 175 (2,123 years after Adam [Gen 17:1–22; 21:5; 25:7; 1 Chr 1:27–28]). He lived 58 years contemporaneously with Noah. Within the ten generations after Noah, the patriarchs who had died before Abraham were Arpachshad, Peleg, Reu, Serug, Nahor, and Terah. The patriarchs who died after Abraham were Shem (died 35 years after Abraham), Shelah (died three years after Abraham), and Eber (died 64 years after Abraham).

His name is recorded in the genealogy of Jesus in Luke 3:34 as Ἀβραάμ (*Abraam*).

The name *Abram* (אַבְרָם) means "exalted father" or "honorable father," but the name *Abraham* (אַבְרָהָם), which God gave to him at the age of 99, means "father of the multitude" and "father of nations" (Gen 17:5). The name underscores the crucial role that Abraham would play in fulfilling God's administration of redemption.

Adam was the first father of mankind, Noah became the father of the new world after the flood, and Abraham was the father of the chosen people of Israel. He is also the father of faith of the spiritual nation in Jesus Christ.

The history of redemption that had begun with Seth, and continued through Noah during the age of the flood, now reached Abraham. Failure, betrayal, and corruption had seeped even into the line of Shem after the Tower of Babel incident, but God chose Abraham from the house of Terah. By the time Abraham was born, it had only been 292 years since the flood, and only 100 years since the building of the Tower of Babel, but sin was once again overflowing.

(1) Abraham received God's calling in Ur of the Chaldeans (Gen 11:31; Acts 7:2–4).

✻ Abraham's two callings by God organized and presented for the first time in history

Abraham was first called by the God of glory in Ur of the Chaldeans. *Ur* (אוּר) originally means "light" or "fire." Scholars suggest that this name reflects the reverence and worship of fire during those times, which is further evidence that Abraham had lived during a highly idolatrous age. In Joshua 24:2, Joshua said to the people, "From ancient times your fathers lived beyond the River, namely, Terah, the father of Abraham and the father of Nahor, and they served other gods." One day, the God of glory appeared to Abraham and commanded him to leave Ur of the Chaldeans (Acts 7:2–3). Hence, Abraham followed his father, Terah, out of Ur of the Chaldeans and settled in Haran (Gen 11:31).

(2) Abraham fully obeyed God's second calling in Haran and became a blessing (Gen 12:1–3, Heb 11:8).

Haran was one of the magnificent cities of Paddan-aram located in the northern region of Mesopotamia. It is presumed that a significant number of people from the line of Shem lived around this area (Gen 10:22; 24:4; 25:20; 28:5).

Abraham, after leaving Ur of the Chaldeans, settled in Haran. Haran was supposed to be a mere stop on the way to Canaan, but Abraham's filial piety for his father kept him from leaving. Terah was born among the sins of his fathers; he was raised eating and drinking in the midst of sin. He had become so accustomed to sinning that he could not sever ties with sin during the stopover in Haran, and thus settled there. This was the fulfillment of the meaning of his name: "to delay" and "to stay."

Abraham had lived a long time in Haran with Terah when God called him yet a second time, at the age of 75, to finally leave Haran for Canaan (Gen 12:5). God commanded Abraham, "Go forth from your country, and from your relatives and from your father's house, to the land which I will show you" (Gen 12:1).

Abraham obeyed this command and let go of his hold on Terah. It took great resolve to break his attachment completely from his father in order to follow God's command (Gen 12:4). Acknowledging

Abraham's faith, the author of Hebrews testifies, "By faith Abraham, when he was called, obeyed by going out to a place which he was to receive for an inheritance; and he went out, not knowing where he was going" (Heb 11:8). Abraham was 75 years old when he departed from Haran. He lived 100 more years. During that time, he became the father of Isaac and the grandfather of Jacob before dying at the age of 175.

(3) Abraham lived with Isaac for 75 years, and with Jacob for about 15 years.

Hebrews 11:9 states, "By faith [Abraham] lived as an alien in the land of promise, as in a foreign land, dwelling in tents with Isaac and Jacob, fellow heirs of the same promise." What was Abraham's primary duty as he dwelt in his tent? Abraham occupied himself with the work of passing down his faith to his descendants. According to Genesis 18:18–19, God called Abraham for this precise reason. To Abraham's credit, he fully completed this task and yielded the fruit of faith through his son Isaac. This was evident in Isaac's obedience when God commanded Abraham to offer Isaac, his only son of the covenant whom he had begotten at the age of 100, as a burnt offering (Gen 22:1–2, 9).

During the 15 years that he spent living with Jacob, Abraham presumably passed down his faith by recounting stories about God's calling in Ur of the Chaldeans, his delay in Haran, his departure from Haran, all of God's amazing works during the 100 years after he left Haran, and the fulfillment of God's covenant regarding the land and the descendants. Abraham's faith revealed through his life, however, probably had a greater impact than his words.

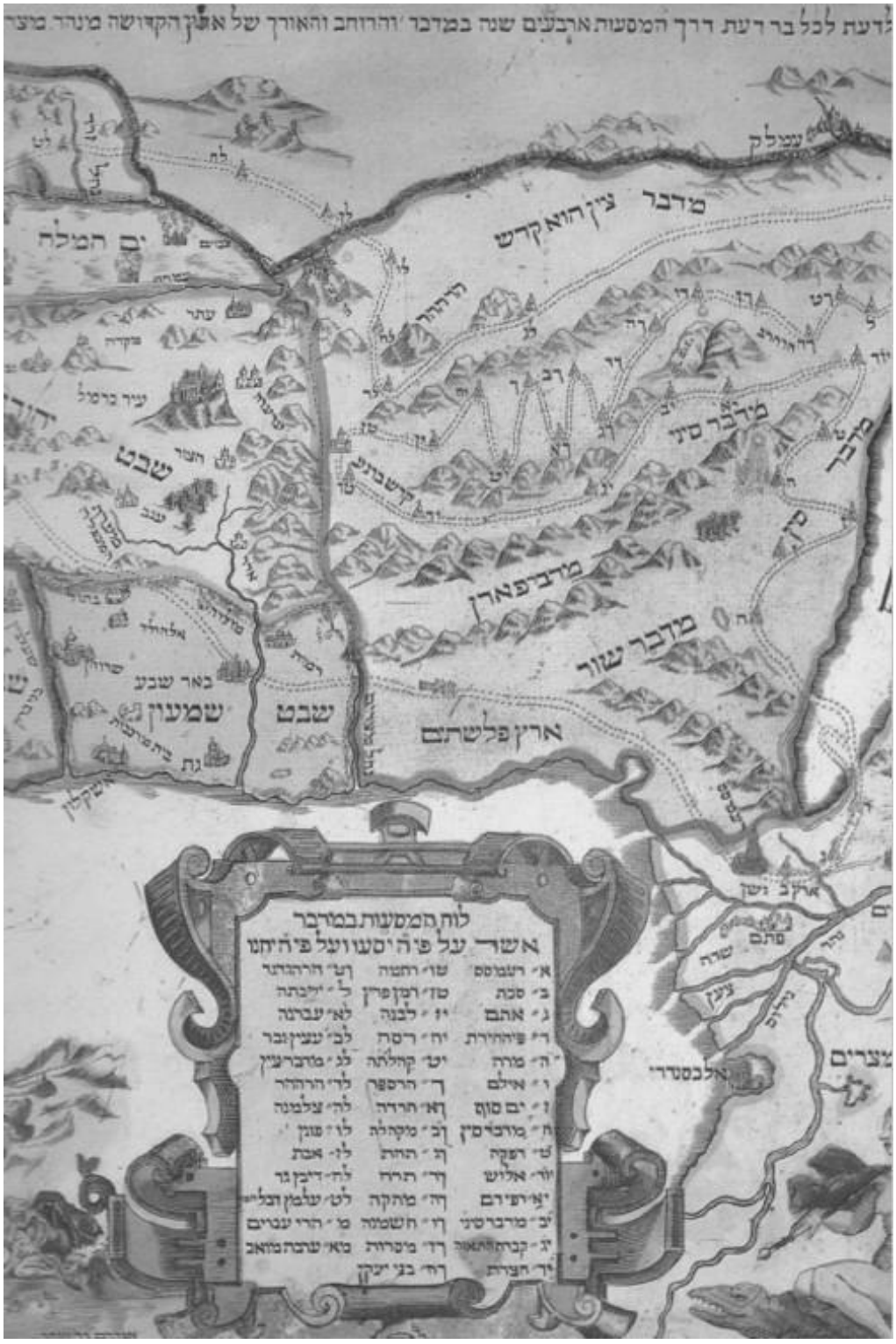
Three generations—Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob—had become one in faith. God was now called the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob, and His amazing work of redemption began to unfold through them (Exod 3:6, 15–16; Matt 22:32; Mark 12:26; Luke 20:37; Acts 3:13; 7:32).

(4) Abraham lived 58 years contemporaneously with Noah.

✻ Organized and presented for the first time in history

Abraham became the father of Isaac at the age of 100, and he died at the age of 175. According to the biblical genealogies, all ten generations after Noah were alive at Abraham's birth. Abraham was born 290 years after Arpachshad, and all these ancestors were still alive then.[71] According to the chronology of the patriarchs, Noah was 892 years old and still alive when Abraham was born. Abraham lived 58 years contemporaneously with Noah until Noah died at the age of 950. This is an amazing fact. Although there were 390 years between the generations of Shem and Abraham, God's covenant that began with Shem after the flood had been passed down until it reached Abraham. Noah's faith probably had a positive influence on Abraham.

God's work of salvation, which had begun with Adam, and passed down through Noah (Adam's tenth generation), finally reached Abraham (Noah's tenth generation) to encounter a new beginning. Afterwards, it unfolded with a new people of God (descendants of Abraham) and the new land of God (land of Canaan).


לדעת לכל בר דעת דרך המסעות ארבעים שנה במדבר והרוחב והאורך של ארץ הקדושה מנהר מצר
ים המלח
מדבר צין הוא קדש
עמלק
שבט
מדבר סיני
מדבר פארן
מדבר שור
ארץ פלשתים
באר שבע
שמעון
שבט
לוח המסעות במדבר
אשר על פי ה׳ יסעו ועל פי ה׳ יחנו
א׳ רעמסס שו׳ רחמה וט׳ הרהגדגד
ב׳ סכת טז׳ רמן פרץ ל׳ יקבתה
ג׳ אתם יז׳ לבנה לא׳ עברנה
ד׳ פיהחירת יח׳ רסה לב׳ עצין זבר
ה׳ מרה יט׳ קהלתה לג׳ מדבר צין
ו׳ אילם ך׳ הרספר לד׳ הרהדר
ז׳ ים סוף וא׳ חרדה לה׳ צלמנה
ח׳ מדבר סין וב׳ מקהלת לו׳ פונן
ט׳ דפקה וג׳ תחת לז׳ אבת
יו׳ אלוש וד׳ תרח לח׳ דיבן גד
יא׳ רפידם וה׳ מתקה לט׳ עלמן דבלי
יב׳ מדבר סיני וו׳ חשמנה מ׳ הרי עברים
יג׳ קברת התאוה וז׳ מסרות מא׳ ערבת מואב
יד׳ חצרת וח׳ בני יעקן
מצרים

PART FIVE

A New Work of Salvation

The Bible contains God's administration for the redemption of fallen mankind. The genealogies in the Book of Genesis clearly illustrate this divine administration through the two distinct spiritual lines: the line of Seth and the line of Cain. The incredible contrast between these two lines clearly shows that the saints who fulfill God's plan for redemption are to lead lives set apart from the world. The genealogies in Genesis 5 and Genesis 11 conclude the generations of the line of Seth with Abraham and at the same time open up a new era in the history of redemption through him. The flow of the lineage from Seth until Abraham can be summed up as the process of being set apart from the world by adhering to the Word of God. The Bible teaches us that those who consecrate themselves from this world will become central figures in the history of redemption and the fulfillment of God's divine administration.

Now, we will examine the differences between the line of Seth and the line of Cain, and the redemptive significance of the process in which Abraham is taken out from the world and put into the administration of God.

> Genesis 18:17–19 And the LORD said, "Shall I hide from Abraham what I am about to do, [18]since Abraham will surely become a great and mighty nation, and in him all the nations of the earth will be blessed? [19]For I have chosen him, in order that he may command his children and his household after him to keep the way of the LORD by doing righteousness and justice; in order that the Lord may bring upon Abraham what He has spoken about him."

CHAPTER 12

The Differences between the Line of Cain and the Line of Seth

Adam and Eve had two sons, Cain and Abel, after they were expelled from the Garden of Eden. When Cain committed the evil act of killing Abel, God appointed another seed, Seth, in place of Abel (Gen 4:25). Adam's two sons were now Cain and Seth. Although they were from the same parents, these two sons became the ancestors of two very distinct lines. Seth became the ancestor of the genealogy of the chosen people who obeyed God's Word and advanced the fulfillment of His plan for salvation. Cain became the ancestor of the genealogy of people who challenged God's will, persecuted His chosen people, and hindered the work of salvation. These two spiritual lines flow distinctly through the Old and New Testaments.

According to our studies thus far on the lines of Seth and of Cain, Seth's descendants had their roots in God and were active participants in His work of redemption. As a reward, they enjoyed longevity on this earth. In contrast, the descendants of Cain flourished in the secular world, but they were cut off from God. They stood on the side of the wicked and afflicted the chosen people, hindering the flow of redemptive history. What are the specific differences between the two lines?

1. The Genealogies of Cain and Seth Have Different Beginnings.

The beginning of all things is important; a bad start increases the probability of a bad ending. The two genealogies had very different beginnings.

The genealogy of the line of Cain began with Cain's departure from the presence of God. Genesis 4:16 states, "Then Cain went out from the presence of the Lord, and settled in the land of Nod, east of Eden." He gave birth to his son Enoch after his departure from God and set the tone for the rest of his line: a genealogy with no ties to God. Regardless of any notable worldly achievements, those who leave God will perish (Ps 73:27). Jeremiah 17:5 states, "Thus says the Lord, 'Cursed is the man who trusts in mankind and makes flesh his strength, and whose heart turns away from the Lord.'"

In contrast, the genealogy of the line of Seth began with God. Genesis 5:1–3, which introduces the genealogy of Adam's descendants, states that God had created Adam and to Adam was born a son at the age of 130 whom he named *Seth*. Thus, the genealogy of Seth traces back to Adam and ultimately to God.

The genealogy of Jesus in Luke 3 also traces its roots back to God, "the son of Seth, the son of Adam, the son of God," testifying that God's plan for salvation was being fulfilled through the line of Seth. Another affirmation of this fact is that the descendants of Seth who were alive during Noah's time were given the honorable title "the sons of God" (Gen 6:2).

There are also many verses in the Bible that clearly state that we are sons of God and that He is our Father.

References: Exodus 4:22; Deuteronomy 1:31; 14:1; 32:5–6; 2 Samuel 7:14; 1 Chronicles 22:10; Isaiah 1:2; 9:6; 63:16; 64:8; Jeremiah 3:4, 19, 31:9; Hosea 11:1; Malachi 2:10; Psalm 2:7; 68:5; 89:26–27; Matthew 5:45; 6:4; 7:11; 10:20, 29, 32; 11:25; 23:9; Mark 11:25; Luke 2:49; 6:36; 10:21–22; 11:2; 12:30; John 1:12; 4:21; 8:41, 54; 20:17; Galatians 4:6; Ephesians 1:17; 1 Peter 1:17

Applying this truth to the lives of believers today, we can conclude that those who do not pray have departed from God, while those who pray to God have their beginnings with Him (Deut 4:7). Those who distance themselves from the Word of God have forsaken Him, while those who draw near to His Word have their beginnings with Him (Ps 1:1–3).

2. The Genealogies of Cain and Seth Demonstrate Different Lifestyles.
We must focus on the differences in the way the descendants of Cain and of Seth lived their lives. Generally, there are two ways in which human beings live their lives on this earth. One way is to live a self-centered life focused on one's own success and happiness. The other way is to live a God-centered life focused solely on glorifying Him.

The descendants in the line of Cain lived self-centered lives. These men introduced in Genesis 4 were founders of new cultures, civilizations, and professions. They were considered successful from the world's perspective. After Cain departed from God's presence, he built the first city and named it *Enoch* after his son (Gen 4:17). His way of life involved building a city to protect himself and exalt his own name. This kind of lifestyle reached its climax with Lamech, the seventh generation. Lamech was an extremely self-centered man who murdered a young boy for inflicting a small wound on him.

Lamech's sons achieved fame by becoming originators of various civilizations. Genesis 4:20–22 tells us that Jabal became the father of those who dwell in tents and have livestock. His brother Jubal became the father of all those who play the lyre and pipe. Tubal-cain was a forger of sharp implements made of bronze and iron. However, their lives did not exalt God's name; their lives were completely self-centered and had absolutely nothing to do with God. The Tower of Babel was a clear manifestation of their lifestyle. Their main purpose for building cities and towers was to make a name for themselves (Gen 11:4).

In contrast, the descendants in the line of Seth lived God-centered lives. For these men who appear in Genesis 5, there is no mention of earthly achievements, new discoveries, or anything else that involved making a name for themselves. Their lives were focused on glorifying God. Enosh called upon the name of the Lord and worshiped Him. Mahalalel sang His praises. Enoch walked with God for 300 years. As his name indicated, Methuselah lived his life with his eyes fixed firmly upon God's judgment that would bring the world to an end. Lamech hoped that God's rest would be established through his son Noah. Noah built the ark and lived a life of obedience to the Word of God. They all lived God-centered lives that manifested His glory.

Since the beginning of the history of mankind, all lives took one of these two paths—the path according to either the line of Cain or of Seth. The path according to the line of Cain may have been endowed with fleeting wealth, honor, power, and fame through various earthly achievements. However, no matter how extravagant their lives may have been, the Bible warns that woe will be upon those who go the way of Cain. Those who follow the path of Cain are like trees twice dead and uprooted, like wild waves of the sea casting up their own shame like foam, and like wandering stars for which the gloom of utter darkness has been reserved forever (Jude 1:11–13). They are like oak trees whose leaves have dried up, like a garden with no water (Isa 1:30), and like broken cisterns that cannot hold water (Jer 2:13). No matter how much water they drink, they will become increasingly thirsty. Furthermore, they are like a bush in the desert that does not see when prosperity comes (Jer 17:5-6). Worries, concerns, sadness, and pain will not cease to engulf them. All this will happen to them because they have forsaken God, the fountain of living waters.

However, the descendants of the line of Seth will continue to yield fruit in their old age. They will be full of sap and very green because they have glorified God's name (Ps 92:14). Why? It is because the God of their faith is the fountain of living waters (Jer 2:13; 17:13). He watches over their lives from beginning to end, exalts their name above every name, and ensures that their names are never erased (Phil 2:9).

3. The Genealogies of Cain and Seth Have Different Records of Birth and Death.
The genealogy of the line of Seth in Genesis 5 was recorded in a specific format: "He became the father of X, then he lived Y years, and all his days were Z." This genealogy accurately records the time of birth, death, and life span. The genealogy of the line of Cain, however, has no record of birth, death, or life span. What does this mean?

First, the difference in the genealogical records signifies that there are lives that God acknowledges and those that He does not. There is no mention of when people were born, how long they lived, or when they died. This shows that God did not esteem their lives. No matter how many people in the world may praise and envy their fancy and successful lives, the years of those whom God does not acknowledge are not recorded in the Bible.

On the other hand, there are exact records of the births, lives, and deaths of the descendants of Seth because their years were esteemed by God. God carried out His plans through this line that He acknowledged. Psalm 1:6 states, "For the Lord knows the way of the righteous, but the way of the wicked will perish."

Second, the difference in the genealogical records indicates that there was a difference with regard to the succession and continuation of faith. Faith in God and the spiritual inheritance were not passed down through the generations of the line of Cain. Their lives were extremely individualistic. They were all deeply engrossed in themselves and obstinate in their own ways. They built up personal strongholds until their lives faded into vanity.

The stream of faith, however, continued to flow down through the generations of Seth's line without ceasing. The descendants of Seth diligently passed down to their children the Word of God and the works of faith which they had also inherited from their fathers (Ps 78:3–8; Isa 38:19; Joel 1:3).

For this reason, the record of Cain's line came to an abrupt end after only seven generations, while the record of Seth's line continued from Adam to Abraham, the twentieth generation. Although there were slight digressions along the way, there were no interruptions in the lineage of the godly descendants or in the works of faith until the coming of the Messiah. It continued from Adam to the Messiah and to us today. This enduring genealogy shows that although individuals died, God's work of life committed to overcoming the curse of death, continued without rest through the godly descendants.

Third, it distinguishes the lives of "beasts" from the lives of true "men." The lives of the men in Cain's line were like those of beasts. For beasts, the repetition of the cycle of birth and death is meaningless. The children in the line of Cain never once gave thought to the redemptive significance of the times in which they lived. They did not live their lives by grace; they lived for themselves and for their own satisfaction. The Bible says that those who lack understanding are no different from beasts (Ps 49:12, 20; Eccl 3:18–19).

However, the children in the line of Seth were awarded the status of men, not of beasts. Genesis 5:2 says, "[He] named them Man." Genesis 5:3 also says that Adam gave birth to Seth. These verses underscore the fact that the line of Seth was passing down the form of the true "man" whom God had created in His own likeness.

4. The Genealogies of Cain and Seth Have Differing Records of Longevity.
There are no records of the years of birth or death for the descendants of Cain. Hence, there is no way to know how long they had lived on earth. On the contrary, records show that the descendants of Seth enjoyed longevity on earth. The blessing of longevity was God's special privilege awarded to Seth's descendants but not to Cain's descendants. The phrase, "So all the days that X lived were Y years," which

appears at the end of each patriarch's record, is an illustration of this blessing (Gen 5:5, 8, 11, 14, 17, 20, 27, 31). "So all the days that X lived were Y years" did not only mean that they lived long lives, but also that the blessing was marked by both spiritual and physical well-being. Longevity did not mean long life in a frail or diseased body; it was accompanied by good health and blessings. The word *live* (חָיָה, *ḥāyā*) in this verse means "to live prosperously" and "to revive from sickness, discouragement, or death."

Living out all the years that God had determined for them is a testimony of His grace and protection. The descendants of Seth had children even when they were well advanced in years. This is another indication that they had enjoyed good health through God's blessings (Prov 4:20–23). What was the secret behind their longevity?

First, they feared God.

The Bible explains that the secret to longevity is the fear of God (Deut 4:40; 5:16; 6:2–3; 11:9; 22:7; Exod 20:12; 1 Kings 3:14; Job 22:15–16; Ps 21:4; 55:23; 91:16; Prov 3:1–2, 7–8, 16; 4:20–23; 9:11; 10:27; 16:31; Eccl 7:17; 8:12–13; Eph 6:1–3).

Proverbs 10:27 states, "The fear of the Lord prolongs life, but the years of the wicked will be shortened." "To fear God" means to wholeheartedly revere and serve Him, acknowledging that He is the One to be awed. The author of Ecclesiastes draws this conclusion when he writes, "The conclusion, when all has been heard, is: fear God and keep His commandments, because this applies to every person" (Eccl 12:13). The command to fear God appears in many places throughout the Bible (e.g. Lev 19:14, 32; Deut 5:29; 6:2; 10:12, 20; Prov 3:7; 23:17). The fear of the Lord is the beginning of all wisdom (Job 28:28; Ps 111:10; Prov 1:7; 9:10). Those who fear God keep away from evil and turn away from its path (Job 28:28; Prov 3:7; 8:13; 16:6, 17). The fear of God is the path to blessings without want (Ps 34:7–9; 128:1; Prov 14:26–27, 22:4; Isa 33:6). In 2 Corinthians 7:1, the end time is described as a world covered with filthy sins. The only way for us to preserve our spirits and keep our bodies blameless and unblemished is to have the fear of God. The fear of God perfects holiness and allows us to see God (Heb 12:14).

Second, they distanced themselves from sin.

If we want to enjoy longevity, we must immediately do away with sins that are near us in our lives. Sin shortens our lives and prevents the blessings of heaven from reaching us (Jer 5:23–25). The descendants of Seth enjoyed longevity because they repented and distanced themselves from sin. In the Bible, Methuselah enjoyed the greatest longevity (969 years; eighth generation from Adam), followed by Jared (962 years; sixth generation from Adam), and then Noah (950 years; tenth generation from Adam). Their longevity calls for a reflection upon the truth that mankind was originally created to live eternally (1 John 2:25).

Man was originally created for eternal life, but death came by way of sin (Rom 5:12; 6:23). Man, however, did not immediately die, but lived a long life because God delayed the punishment of sin to a certain extent. Nevertheless, man's life span grew shorter and shorter as people continued to sin despite God's love. Human life span was abruptly shortened once after the flood. Later, when man attempted to exalt his own name and challenge God by constructing the Tower of Babel, God responded by shortening man's life span again by half. In the beginning, the descendants of Adam enjoyed astonishing life spans approaching 1,000 years. After the flood, man's life span was ranging somewhere between 400 to 600 years which was then reduced to about 200 years after the Tower of Babel incident. After Abraham, no one lived over 200 years. Moses said that his eyes did not grow dim until he was 120 years old, but in Psalm 90 he sang, "As for the days of our life, they contain seventy years, or if due to strength, eighty years" (Ps 90:10).

Shortened life spans are a sure indication that sin had seeped deeply into the lives of mankind (Ps 55:23). Furthermore, sin had a staggering impact not only on man's life span, but also on the environment

—the parts of nature that man breathes, eats, and drinks. According to God's principle of creation, the earth rotates around its own axis while simultaneously revolving around the sun, maintaining 24-hour days and four beautiful seasons of the year (Gen 1:14). The countless stars also keep their place and maintain order in the universe. Their stringent yet wondrous display of order manifests God's great love and His marvelous works (Ps 139:14).

The universe was originally created to benefit mankind. However, the wickedness of man was great on the earth and the earth was filled with violence (Gen 6:5–7, 11–12) so that God became sorry that He had made man; therefore, God judged the world with the flood. The harmonious workings of nature, climate, and temperature, which had once been perfectly suitable for life, were altered after the flood (Gen 8:22). Changes in the climate meant that nature no longer provided only good things for mankind. Unlike the prediluvian days, the abnormal changes in the climate and seasons (severe cold or extremely intense heat) sped up the aging process and caused diseases leading to significantly shortened life spans. Genesis 8:21–22 explains that such changes took place because "the intent of man's heart is evil from his youth." From this point on, nature did not just bestow benefits; it also brought harm to mankind (Jer 5:23–25). This clearly was the result of sin. Regarding this, God said to Adam, "Because you have listened to the voice of your wife, and have eaten from the tree about which I commanded you, saying, 'You shall not eat from it'; cursed is the ground because of you; in toil you shall eat of it all the days of your life" (Gen 3:17).

Third, they honored their parents.

The Bible states that those who honor their parents will enjoy longevity (Deut 5:16; Eph 6:1–3). The fifth commandment also states, "Honor your father and your mother, that your days may be prolonged in the land which the Lord your God gives you" (Exod 20:12). Accordingly, the descendants of Seth who had enjoyed longevity must have also honored their parents. Why is it so important to honor our parents? It is a way of confessing that we remember the origin of our existence. Furthermore, honoring parents is equivalent to honoring God the Creator. Among the Ten Commandments, the fifth through the tenth commandments outline relationships between people. Among these, the fifth is the only commandment that includes the phrase, "the Lord your God," because honoring our parents leads to honoring God. By honoring our parents, we are led to remember our God—the life-giver and the origin of our existence.

We have learned, thus far, that those who obey the Word of God and keep from sinning will receive the blessing of longevity (Prov 3:1–2). We must distance ourselves from sin for miserable and fearful are its consequences. We must also fear God and fulfill our God-given duties. Then, good opportunities will come along, good things will happen, spiritual works of life will occur, and our lives will prosper and advance. As we have confirmed through Seth's descendants, the eternal Word of God must continue to be passed down not only to the current generation, but also to all future generations until the Second Coming of the Lord.

Why did God show His love and mercy by granting the blessing of longevity despite the inevitability of death for all mankind after Adam? It was not merely for the purpose of multiplying and increasing the number of humankind on the earth.

First, it was for the fulfillment of God's blessing to be fruitful, multiply, and fill the earth (Gen 1:28; 9:1, 7). In accordance with this blessing, there were no generational breaks in the line of Seth. Thus, they grew in number and formed the nation of Israel through the descendants of Abraham. Ultimately, a countless number of spiritual descendants of Abraham are born through Jesus Christ, who came as a descendant of Abraham (Gal 3:7–9, 29).

Second, it was for the preservation of the holy seed so that God's plan for redemption could be passed down through the generations of godly descendants. The godly patriarchs spent the long years of their

lives imparting the Word of God to their descendants (Gen 18:18–19) the descendants, in turn, received proper indoctrination of God's Word. Through their longevity, God achieved His plan for the transmission of His Word.

In Genesis 5 the phrase, "became the father of" (or "begot"), appears 28 times in the Hebrew Hiphil stem,[72] indicating that God was actively and providentially intervening in the births of the children. The continuity of the godly line of Seth is proof that God's absolute sovereign work had sustained it.

Ultimately, God preserved His holy seed during the darkened generations by granting longevity to the godly descendants. The longevity of the godly seed was a means of passing on the Word of God. Moreover, it was God's providential plan to deepen and strengthen the holy and intimate fellowship with God while succeeding His covenants for their fulfillment.

The day will come when the issue of sin is finally resolved and when creation is restored to its original state so that there may be eternal life without death (Rev 21:1–4). Isaiah prophesied that the day will come when nature will not harm mankind (Isa 11:6–9; 65:17–25; cf. Ps 121:6). This day will come when the earth is filled with the knowledge of the glory of the Lord (Hab 2:14). This will be the day when all creation will be made anew through the Second Coming of Jesus Christ (Rev 21:5). This is the day for which all creation has been anxiously longing (Rom 8:19–23). A new world will be created in which there will no longer be tears, death, lamenting, or weeping.

God chose and called Abraham from the line of Seth to prepare for the coming of this glorious day. In truth, until Abraham appeared at the forefront of the history of redemption, God's work focused mainly on calling His chosen people out from the sinful world in order to set them apart.

CHAPTER 13

The Work of Separation

Genesis 12:1 Now the Lord said to Abram, "Go forth from your country, and from your relatives and from your father's house, to the land which I will show you."

In reality, the history of Israel began with God's command for separation. God commanded Abraham, "Go forth from your country." During the long period of time preceding Abraham, God channeled His focus on separating and segregating His people.

Separation from what? It was separation from a pervasively wicked world. The chief purpose of the genealogy of Seth's line (Gen 5:1–32) and Shem's (Gen 11:10–32) was to demonstrate how God had set apart and protected His chosen lineage from Adam to Abraham.

The ultimate purpose for separation was to carry forward the work of salvation, which began with Adam and continued through Abraham, the first direct ancestor of the chosen nation of Israel, until the coming of the Savior. God wanted to prevent the lineage of godly faith from being cut off before the final hour of the history of redemption (Hos 11:4; Mal 2:15). This was precisely why He diligently segregated His people from the powers of darkness through His love and protection and, at times, with a stick or whip.

The work of separation, however, is always accompanied by pain. It cannot be carried out or even understood without painful tears. Abraham, the father of faith, was the fruit of God's tears and sweat, the steadfast offspring dedicated to the work of salvation.

1. The Work of Separation among the Patriarchs after Noah

The names of the patriarchs in the line of Seth, especially from Arpachshad to Abraham, progressively reveal the process of separation essential for the establishment of faith. God opened up a new era after the flood and wanted the godly patriarchs to overcome the battle against idolatry completely and set out on a pilgrim's journey to preserve the tradition of faith. It was only after this that the "God of Shem" could also become the God of his descendants (Gen 9:26). Unfortunately, Shem's descendants who came after Peleg did not live according to the positive meanings of their names. Instead of setting themselves apart from the world, they intermingled with the world.

From this point, we will examine God's methods of separation suggested in the meaning of their names and how they apply to us today.

(1) Arpachshad

Arpachshad was Shem's son, and his name means "boundary." He and his people separated themselves from the land of their origin and set up new boundaries. Israel was originally a small nation, but God chose the Israelites as His holy people and marked Israel as His own territory (Exod 19:6; Deut 7:6–7). When Jesus left the glory of His throne in heaven and came to this earth, He came to His own land and to His territory (John 1:11). We are also God's sacred territory and His heirs. As such, how must we live?

First, we must obey God's Word.

Just as a citizen of a country is expected to abide by the laws of that country, so too must we abide by the law of His Word if we are truly part of His domain. God said to His people in Exodus 19:5, "Now then, if you will indeed obey My voice and keep My covenant, then you shall be My own possession among all the peoples, for all the earth is Mine."

Second, we must become His holy domain.

Exodus 19:6 calls those who have become part of God's domain a "holy people," and 1 Peter 2:9 calls them a "holy nation." God is holy, and thus we, too, must be holy (Lev 11:45). We must sanctify ourselves so that the hands of sin and darkness may not touch us (1 John 5:18), until the coming of our Lord (1 Thess 5:23).

When we set ourselves apart from the world, we are no longer under Satan's rule. We are under God's boundless care and endless counsel. For this reason we are called "Thy people, Thine inheritance" (Deut 9:26, 29), "His people" (Deut 32:43), "a treasured possession" (Deut 26:18), and "a consecrated people to the Lord" (Deut 26:19). God promised that He would set His nation high above all nations (Deut 4:6–8; 26:19; 28:1). Thus, we who are under His sovereign rule are the most blessed on this earth (Deut 33:29).

(2) Shelah

Shelah was Arpachshad's son, and his name means "throw out" or "send away." This refers to separation caused by being thrown toward a determined location or by being sent out with a specific purpose. If it is for the will of God, we must make the resolute decision to leave our current dwelling place and head toward the newly designated place no matter how lowly, how unfamiliar, or inconvenient the place may be. Whether "Achor's Valley" (Isa 65:10; Hos 2:15) or desolate waste, if that is where God's will lies, then we must take the gospel and run to the place to where we have been dispatched.

As Jesus was ascending into heaven after His resurrection, He commissioned His disciples not to leave Jerusalem, but to stay there (Acts 1:4); Jerusalem was His marked territory. After they received the Holy Spirit, however, He commanded them to leave Jerusalem, saying, "But you shall receive power when the Holy Spirit has come upon you; and you shall be My witnesses both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea and Samaria, and even to the remotest part of the earth" (Acts 1:8). God wanted the members of the early church to be *sent out* throughout Judea, to Samaria, and to the ends of the earth with the gospel in hand. For this purpose, God gave rise to the great persecution that scattered the believers throughout Judea, Samaria, and the ends of the earth after the advent of the Holy Spirit at Pentecost (Acts 8:1). This was God's holy throw.

The act of being sent away from one's current dwelling place to a different one marks the beginning of a lonely journey. In reality, it is hard to accept and obey the command to leave for a specific place. If, however, we are sent for the sake of the gospel, we will receive the blessing of the enlargement of our borders and the expansion of our boundaries, much like the blessing of Jabez (1 Chr 4:10).

Today, we need to be sent out with the gospel in hand toward places of unbelief where the gospel has not yet been preached. We must conquer lands governed by Satan in order to expand God's boundaries. God delights in the feet of those who preach the gospel (Isa 52:7; Rom 10:15; Eph 6:15). Instead of taking comfort in "our boundaries," we must take the gospel of life and salvation and bravely send it to the world (Matt 4:18–22; 28:18–20). Through this work, God's boundaries will expand to the farthest ends of the earth.

(3) Eber

The name *Eber* means "to cross the river and continue advancing toward a certain place." The meaning of the name conjures up the image of a person sent out with a mission, overcoming all the fierce obstacles, jumping over hurdles, and marching forward without looking back.

The journey of faith is a long-distance race with many obstacles along the way. No matter what kind of obstacles may stand before us, we must continue forward until we reach our destination. The obstacle that we face can be ourselves, family, relatives, friends, the threat of death, or the riches of this world. We

must be separated from these obstacles of life. We must neither avoid nor complain about the obstacles; rather, we must hold on to the Word of God for the power to overcome them and continue on. In order to do this, we must continuously overcome ourselves, battling against our own thoughts and bearing the pain of cutting off human relationships if necessary (Luke 9:61–62).

There were innumerable rivers and barriers standing in the apostle Paul's way (2 Cor 11:23–30) when he broke out of the boundaries of the Law and was thrown out as a vessel for the Gentiles (Acts 9:15). However, Paul leapt over these obstacles by relying only upon God. He confessed in 1 Corinthians 15:10, "I labored even more than all of them, yet not I, but the grace of God with me."

King David encountered many obstacles in each of the battles that he fought, but he was victorious because he trusted in God. Regarding his feats, King David declared in Psalm 18:29, "For by Thee I can run upon a troop; and by my God I can leap over a wall." Today, we hope to become spiritual Ebers by crossing over rivers of sin and setting ourselves apart so that the boundaries of the gospel may greatly expand.

(4) Peleg

The name *Peleg* means "separate" or "divide." Foremost, this is a reference to the division of nations resulting from the Tower of Babel incident (Gen 11:9), but it is also a reflection of God's desire for separation. At a time when faith had been commingled and defiled, God called for the separation of faith and disbelief, of good and evil, of light and darkness, and of the spirit and the flesh (2 Cor 6:14–16). Although Peleg was a descendant of the godly line of Shem, he participated in the construction of the Tower of Babel. Those who built the tower possessed arrogant desires to exalt their own names rather than God's. They also desired to protect themselves by building their own city. Satan coaxed the people to build towers of arrogance and complacency in order to prevent the will of God from advancing. Peleg had commingled with such people.

God's work of separation began when men united to build their own city and tower. God intervened by confusing their language (Gen 11:7). Through His intervention and separation, God prevented the people from committing even greater sins and prepared for the birth of Abraham through the lineage of Peleg many years thereafter.

The patriarchs from Peleg until just before Abraham (i.e., Peleg, Reu, Serug, Nahor, and Terah) could not completely separate themselves from sin. They were not able to fulfill God's hope of separation bound in the meaning of their names. Consequently, their names mainly function as a guide to understanding how God separated and set Abraham apart for His redemptive purpose.

The pain of separation is mandatory for those who seek to enter the kingdom of heaven, the spiritual Canaan. We must separate ourselves and come out from the Babylon of all unbelief (Rev 18:2–4). This means separation from a double-sided faith that seeks the counsel of the wicked. It is separation from the path of sinners who compromise with evil; it is separation from the seat of scoffers (Ps 1:1).

At the end of the painful struggle for separation, we will find God standing and waiting for us. God will take care of us and wipe away all of our tears. He will untangle all of our problems in one sweep (Luke 18:8). Hallelujah!

(5) Reu

The name *Reu* means "friend" or "special relationship." This suggests that we need to have faith great enough to be called a "friend of God" in order to separate ourselves from this world (Gen 18:17; John 15:14–15). God is the Creator, but He is a personal God who wants to build an intimate relationship with His chosen people (Job 29:4; Ps 25:14; Amos 3:7). Abraham was considered a "friend of God" after he left his father's house and became consecrated through faith (2 Chr 20:7; Isa 41:8; Jas 2:23). There are no secrets between friends; Abraham knew in advance about the judgment that would fall upon Sodom and

Gomorrah (Gen 18:17). John 15:14–15 teaches us how we can also be called a "friend of God."

> John 15:14–15 You are My friends, if you do what I command you. [15]No longer do I call you slaves, for the slave does not know what his master is doing; but I have called you friends, for all things that I have heard from My Father I have made known to you.

What must we do to become a friend of God? We need to obey completely and do exactly as Jesus commands. John 15:14 states, "You are My friends, if you do what I command you." Faith without works is dead (Jas 2:26). A true friend is one who can be by our side at any time or hour. Let us draw closer to God our eternal friend (Ps 73:28; Jas 4:8). God draws near to us when we pray (Deut 4:7). If the president of our country were to become our friend, our status in society would change overnight. How much more so if we become friends of God?

(6) Serug

The name *Serug* means "intertwined tendril" or "firm strength." As the name indicates, becoming intertwined or gaining firm strength in God is a great way to separate ourselves from the world and restore our relationship with Him. Separation from the world becomes possible when a believer becomes intertwined and bound in God's Word as tendrils attach and do not fall away from the wall (John 15:7). Believers cannot consecrate themselves from the world by their own will or strength; they can be made holy only through the Word of God and prayer (1 Tim 4:5). Separation is possible only when God's sovereign love is poured out through grace. God's sovereign love is the "firm strength" that holds His believers.

In 2 Corinthians 5:14 the apostle Paul tells us, "For the love of Christ controls us." The word "control" in this verse is also translated as "attract." The New International Version translates this verse as "For Christ's love compels us." *To control* is συνέχω (*synechō*) in Greek, meaning "to hold fast," and is used with reference to the act of herding cattle from all sides. The love of Jesus Christ has a strong hold of our hand and will guide us forward just as a shepherd guides his sheep.

The love of Christ also had a strong hold on the apostle Paul. Christ's love constrained him so that he did not live for himself; it enabled him to walk the path of a difficult calling with relative ease. Paul remained focused on God until He was fully satisfied. God's love was so great that Paul could not help but go out and evangelize; he could not help but offer his whole body in faithfulness. God's love was so great that Paul forfeited all his possessions, his honor, and his knowledge. For Paul, everything was rubbish before the love of Christ (Phil 3:8). Christ's love was so great that Paul did not hesitate to give up his life in Rome; he offered up his life with joy.

Yes, true separation is possible only when we are crazy for the love of Christ. Once we truly experience His love, we will have no regrets with regard to the immeasurable pain, suffering, and personal loss that come with separation. When we are led by the love of Christ, we will be able to walk the path of separation with joy, even if it may be the path of martyrdom.

(7) Nahor

The name *Nahor* means "to be short of breath" or "to pant." On a positive note, the name depicts a person who, with every ounce of strength, confronts and battles the evil of this world until he is victorious. It describes a heart that seeks to protect and keep the Word of God from Satan. It describes the immense effort to resist being tainted by the sins of the world and separate from the old habits and ways of life. The apostle Paul called this battle "the good fight" (2 Tim 4:7). This conflict is not with an external enemy; it is an internal struggle against the evil within (Rom 7:16–25). It is the act of "buffet[ing] my body and mak[ing] it my slave" (1 Cor 9:27). Paul advises us to "compete" aggressively for the final victory (1 Cor 9:25).

Even as we perform the Lord's work, there are many times when our zeal gets the best of us and we

work to satisfy ourselves and our own greed (Matt 16:22–23). At times, our zeal is motivated by the awareness of other people's gaze; sometimes, it comes from competitiveness. Human zeal gone astray displeases God. It may please other human beings for a moment, but God looks into our hearts, and He does not acknowledge this kind of zeal (1 Sam 16:7). It is all in vain. When this kind of zeal becomes the motivation for work, it will only lead to exhaustion without yielding fruit. As Paul stated, our zeal has to be a godly zeal and godly jealousy (2 Cor 11:2). When we receive the zeal of God's Spirit, God will do the work. He will provide us with all the strength, ability, wisdom, and wealth that we need (Phil 2:13).

Jesus always worked with godly zeal (John 5:17). This was especially evident in the Garden of Gethsemane when He prayed earnestly to resolve the issue of sin for each and every one of us. He shed so many tears for us; He vindicated us countless number of times. He fought intensely against Satan to the point of bloodshed on our behalf (Luke 22:44; Heb 5:7).

Paul also worked with this godly zeal and made seven exclamations in 2 Corinthians 7:11, six of which begin with the word "what." This word *what* is ἀλλά (*alla*) in Greek and means "more on the other hand" or "more besides." We must exhaust our efforts to be more faithful to the work entrusted to us, pray more, serve more, evangelize more, labor more, and always persevere in God's service (1 Cor 15:58; 1 Thess 4:1; 2 Tim 4:2). Laboring harder is the way to live up to the grace that we have received and separate ourselves from the path of sinners (1 Cor 15:10).

(8) Terah

The name *Terah* means "stay" or "delay." Terah lived a wretched life, worshiping idols in Ur of the Chaldeans, the seedbed of sin (Josh 24:2). However, he was enthralled by the fear of the God of glory who appeared to his son Abraham (Acts 7:2–3). Momentarily, he repented and abandoned his old way of life to leave Ur of the Chaldeans with Abraham and separate himself from the city of idols (Gen 11:31).

However, unable to cut ties completely with his old sinful ways, Terah settled in Haran and eventually died there (Gen 11:32). Nonetheless, just moving out of Ur of the Chaldeans and crossing the river to Haran was a great feat for Terah, who had lived a life totally immersed in idol worship.

Terah's life teaches us that we need to live a pilgrim's life if we want to become a blessing (בְּרָכָה, *bĕrākā*), possess spiritual and material wealth, and bear many descendants of faith as Abraham had (Gen 12:2). If Terah had moved from Haran to Canaan with Abraham, he would have become the father of faith along with Abraham. Furthermore, he would have become a great name, respected by his descendants just as Abraham was. As the meaning of his name "to delay" or "to stay" indicates, Terah had delayed and stayed behind. Satan often uses the abundance of wealth like that of Haran to keep us from moving toward the spiritual Canaan, and delay the fulfillment of God's will.

Haran was an important center of commerce because of its location midway between Canaan and Mesopotamia. It became a city of abundance because considerable commercial activity took place there. Like Terah, people's hearts are often held down by the treasures and riches of this world (Matt 6:21; Luke 12:34). If we dedicate our lives to following the path of wealth, bowing before money, and using money as a gauge of success, then our hearts have already forsaken God. We cannot serve both God and money (Matt 6:24). God tells us not to fix our hopes on the uncertainty of riches (1 Tim 6:17). The love of money is the root of all sorts of evil (1 Tim 6:10). Judas loved money and fell into temptation as a result (John 12:4–6). It led him to betray Jesus and hand Him over for money—a fatal mistake that could never be wiped away. In the end, he hanged himself and died a tragic death.

The verb *separate* means "to disconnect," "to sever," to set apart," or "to make a distinction between." Doing this is not as easy as it sounds. We must first feel great indignation for the sins that we have committed and then pound our hearts in earnest repentance (Ps 32:3; 34:18; Prov 28:13). We cannot draw near to God as long as we are still connected to the world by sin. Sin will only work to separate us from God and accuse us before Him. The sins that we commit will follow us like a shadow throughout our

lives; they will look for us and testify against us (Num 32:23; Isa 59:12). Revelation 17:16 explains that sin will make us desolate and naked and will burn us up with fire. So persistent and vicious is sin that Jesus, though He was without sin, fell on His knees and rubbed His forehead against the ground in fervent prayer in order to free us from our sins (Luke 22:44). Like Jesus, we must feel great scorn for sin, and we must repent thoroughly of our sins so that sin cannot adhere to us in any way. We must become totally separated from sin.

It is only then that we can fully obey the command "Leave!" If there is anything that keeps us from walking the path of a pilgrim, we must sever ourselves from it through faith. True faith is answering God's command with "Yes" and "Amen," followed by action even though His plan may not be immediately comprehensible (2 Cor 1:20). We must not become complacent and relish in the actuality that God has chosen us. We cannot advance one step without self-sacrifice, faithfulness, and focusing our eyes on the final goal each and every day.

As biblical history shows, God will see the end of what He has determined—His plan for the salvation of mankind. If we do not take comfort in this world, if we do not hesitate or step backwards, then we can advance forward with each step and at last enter God's kingdom as holy saints set apart from this world.

2. The Work of Separation in Abraham's Life

There were four crucial levels of separation in Abraham's life. These four levels represent different levels of Christian faith.

The First Separation: separation from his homeland and relatives, separation from Terah (Gen 12:1; Acts 7:2–4)

Ur of the Chaldeans was the place where Abraham's ancestors had lived and worshiped idols (Josh 24:2, 15). His departure from this land represents the first step in faith for Christians: separation from the world.

Ur of the Chaldeans was a fertile land located southeast of Baghdad and was the center of the ancient civilization as well as the center of idolatry. Idol worship had achieved its peak during Abraham's time, and Terah was more absorbed in worshiping idols than in worshiping the true God. This was when God commanded Abraham, "Depart from your country and your relatives" (Gen 12:1, Acts 7:2–4). He obeyed and departed from Ur of the Chaldeans with his father, Terah, and arrived in Haran. Terah, however, was tempted by the ease of life in Haran and settled there, though it should have been a mere rest stop on the way to Canaan.

At last, when Abraham was 75 years old, God called him a second time, but this time He commanded Abraham to leave not only his country and his relatives, but also his father's house (Gen 12:1). This was an intensified command spurred on by Abraham's failure to fully obey God's command when he had first been called out of Ur. Genesis 12:4–5 clarifies that it was only after Abraham had fully obeyed God's command to separate from his father's house that he was able to enter Canaan.

> Genesis 12:4–5 So Abram went forth as the Lord had spoken to him; and Lot went with him. Now Abram was seventy-five years old when he departed from Haran. [5]And Abram took Sarai his wife and Lot his nephew, and all their possessions which they had accumulated, and the persons which they had acquired in Haran, and they set out for the land of Canaan; thus they came to the land of Canaan.

❋ The two contradictory records regarding Terah's death (Gen 11:31–32; Acts 7:2–4) closely examined and presented for the first time in history.

Because Abraham was living in a patriarchal society, it was difficult for him to reject his father's wishes and leave him behind. He was 75 years old, and his father Terah was 145 years old and alive, when he left Haran (Gen 11:26; 12:4). It must have been heartbreaking for the firstborn in charge of the household to leave his father in his old age. The verse in Acts 7:4, "And from there, after his father died,

God removed him into this country in which you are now living," shows how determined Abraham had been to follow the Word of God. The word for *death* in Acts 7:4 is ἀποθνῄσκω (*apothnēskō*) in Greek, used to represent symbolic death or death in a spiritual sense (1 Cor 15:31). It is apparent that this word was used to signify Abraham's total separation from his filial affections for his father. Terah was as good as dead to him (Luke 14:26). Terah died 60 years later in Haran at the age of 205 (Gen 11:32). Abraham overcame the pain of such separation and followed the word with faith (Gen 12:4).

The Second Separation: separation from Lot (Gen 13)

Genesis 13:10–11 reveals that Lot had possessed secular greed. He chose the valley of the Jordan when he parted ways with Abraham because it was well watered everywhere all the way to the land of Zoar, like the garden of the Lord. God separated Abraham from such a person. This represents separation from lingering secular tendencies and continued instability even after initial separation from the world.

> Genesis 13:10–12 And Lot lifted up his eyes and saw all the valley of the Jordan, that it was well watered everywhere—this was before the Lord destroyed Sodom and Gomorrah—like the garden of the Lord, like the land of Egypt as you go to Zoar. [11]So Lot chose for himself all the valley of the Jordan; and Lot journeyed eastward. Thus they separated from each other. [12]Abram settled in the land of Canaan, while Lot settled in the cities of the valley, and moved his tents as far as Sodom.

Lot had accompanied Abraham throughout his journey out of Ur into Canaan. Lot had been with him through the toughest times, from their migration to Canaan, the foreign land of the Gentiles, until settlement. Hence, the separation must have been heartbreaking.

Only those who can overcome the pain of separation can become true disciples of Jesus. In Luke 14:26, Jesus says, "If anyone comes to Me, and does not hate his own father and mother and wife and children and brothers and sisters, yes, and even his own life, he cannot be My disciple." He continues in Luke 14:33, "So therefore, no one of you can be My disciple who does not give up all his own possessions." Today, we can also become true disciples when we cut our ties with the secular and materialistic things of this world.

The Third Separation: separation from Ishmael (Gen 21)

After Isaac, the covenantal son, was born, God commanded Abraham to drive out Ishmael, the first son who had been born to him through his maidservant by means of human effort and scheming (Gen 21:10–14). This represents the level of faith with which we must surrender our own plans and powers to submit before the great will of God—a process through which we deny ourselves.

> Galatians 4:30 But what does the Scripture say? "Cast out the bondwoman and her son, for the son of the bondwoman shall not be an heir with the son of the free woman."

In Genesis 17:18 Abraham confessed, "Oh that Ishmael might live before Thee!" Genesis 21:11 tells us, "And the matter distressed Abraham greatly because of his son," hinting at how much love Abraham had poured out upon his first son the approximately 17 years that his son had been with him. Abraham's affection for his son, however, did not stop him from resolutely obeying God's command to send out his roughly 17-year-old son, and his mother Hagar. Separation from Ishmael must have caused Abraham the greatest pain in his life: the pain of having his flesh torn away.

We must also drive out the "Ishmaels" in our lives today. We must deny ourselves of the things that we love—things that we cannot let go of even though we know that they have nothing to do with the will of God—if those things will hold us back in our journey of faith. In doing so, we earn the right to possess the true inheritance of God.

The Fourth Separation: separation from Isaac (Gen 22)

After Abraham had driven Ishmael out, God commanded Abraham to offer up Isaac, his only son whom he loved, as a burnt offering (Gen 22:1–12). In faith he obeyed. Of course, God ultimately saved Isaac from Abraham's hands, but this near-sacrifice required offering someone whom Abraham loved and cherished the most. He had truly intended to offer up to God that which held the greatest value to him (Gen 22:16–17). For Abraham, this separation was equivalent to death; it shook the very foundation of his existence. Abraham was required to sever his bond not only with the son born to him according to the flesh, but also with Isaac, the covenantal son, who was the sole object of his affection at the time.

Abraham overcame this incomprehensible test through his total trust in God. This was a display of mature faith—the ability to return to God what belongs to Him. In essence, he was confessing that even the blessings that had originally come from God ultimately belong to Him. The 24 elders make a similar confession in Revelation 4:10–11; they glorify God by casting down before His throne the crowns that they had received from Him (Rev 4:4), confessing in song that all created things belong to God.

> Revelation 4:10–11 The twenty-four elders will fall down before Him who sits on the throne, and will worship Him who lives forever and ever, and will cast their crowns before the throne, saying, 11"Worthy art Thou, our Lord and our God, to receive glory and honor and power; for Thou didst create all things, and because of Thy will they existed, and were created."

The Christian journey of faith is similar to these steps of separation. Faith matures through separation (Isa 52:11). We cannot advance forward to the new place to which we have been called unless we depart from our sinful past, old habits, and old ways. If we cannot completely abandon them as God commands, then those very things will return to us in the future as thorns and snares (Josh 23:13; Judg 2:3).

When God first commanded Abraham to leave Ur of the Chaldeans, and again when God commanded him to leave Haran, where he had moved with his father, he submitted and departed on a pilgrim's journey not knowing his final destination (Gen 12:1; Heb 11:8). From a societal viewpoint, this path meant forfeiting his rights, losing his resting place, and living a sojourner's life. It was a journey impossible to take had he not endured the separations with tremendous determination and courage.

Abraham, by faith and fear of God, had overcome the pain of separation from his father Terah, his nephew Lot, his son Ishmael, and his son of the covenant Isaac. As a result, he achieved the apex of faith at last.

> Genesis 22:12 And [the angel of the Lord] said, "Do not stretch out your hand against the lad, and do nothing to him; for now I know that you fear God, since you have not withheld your son, your only son, from Me."

God says to those who obey the command for separation, "I know that you fear God," and continues to fulfill the work of redemption through them. People of faith today must follow in Abraham's footsteps of faith in order to become true spiritual Hebrews and cross over the spiritual Euphrates River. In the eyes of some, this path may appear imprudent, like the journey of a wretched wanderer without a final destination, but this path is a holy and honorable path taken in obedience to the Word of God.

(1) What must we do to achieve holy separation?

First, we must come out from the world, the spiritual Babylon, and refrain from participating in its sins (Rev 18:4). Next, we must live lives consecrated from this world. In 2 Corinthians 6:14–7:1 we learn about the principles of holy consecration. Although we Christians physically live in this world, our lives must be thoroughly set apart from the world; we must not compromise with the world, but instead we must maintain holiness befitting the children of God (Lev 11:44–45; 1 Pet 1:15–16). In addition, we must reject various worldly philosophies and liberal theologies. Compromising with these teachings will ultimately cause us to break away from the pure teaching of the gospel.

(2) What kind of blessing awaits those who walk the holy path of separation?

God gave a great blessing to Abraham, who walked the holy path of separation (Gen 22:17). This great blessing, according to the Living Bible translation, is an "incredible blessing"—an immense blessing unimaginable to the human mind. This blessing crosses over the boundaries of human understanding. This

“great blessing” was fulfilled when Jesus came as the descendant of Abraham (Matt 1:1). God Almighty, the Lord over all the universe and creation, came upon this earth as a descendant of Abraham. What greater blessing could there be? Even today, those who follow the Word and overcome the pains of separation as Abraham had done will receive the same “great blessing” that Abraham had received (Gal 3:6–9). Hallelujah!

> Genesis 22:15–18 Then the angel of the Lord called to Abraham a second time from heaven, [16]and said, “By Myself I have sworn, declares the Lord, because you have done this thing, and have not withheld your son, your only son, [17]indeed I will greatly bless you, and I will greatly multiply your seed as the stars of the heavens, and as the sand which is on the seashore; and your seed shall possess the gate of their enemies. [18]And in your seed all the nations of the earth shall be blessed, because you have obeyed My voice.”

CHAPTER 14

Abraham from the Redemptive Historical Perspective

The Bible was written by God and thus contains no meaningless narratives. The primary purpose of the genealogies recorded until this point was to reveal the root of Abraham; the intent was to make Abraham known. At the same time, it was a record of God's diligence in preparing for and electing Abraham to be the passageway for the Messiah, who was to come for the salvation of mankind.

Most of the genealogies recorded in the Bible list the most important figure at the end so that a new era begins with that person. The genealogy in Genesis 11 was recorded with Abraham in mind and hints at the role that he would play in the future. This is similar to the genealogy in Matthew 1:1–17, which was recorded with the works of Jesus Christ in mind (Gen 17:19; 22:12–18; Gal 3:16).

Abraham, Adam's twentieth generation, was an important figure because he opened the first gateway through which the Messiah could come. This is why Jesus' genealogy begins with Abraham. Matthew 1:1 introduces Jesus as the "son of David, the son of Abraham," not as the son of Adam. Without hesitation, the Jews called Abraham their father (John 8:39). When Lazarus died, he went to heaven and was in Abraham's bosom, while the rich man went to hell. Even from hell the rich man dared to cry out, "Father Abraham" (Luke 16:24, 30). All nations of faith throughout the world began with Abraham. His importance carries on through the New Testament, as the Bible tells us that those who are of faith are blessed with Abraham (Gal 3:6-9).

1. The Work of Sin Proliferated until the Birth of Abraham

God's work that began with creation ran parallel with the major sinful events in the world until Abraham's time. Starting with Adam's eating of the forbidden fruit (Gen 3), Cain's murder (Gen 4), Lamech's song (Gen 4), the marriage of the sons of God and the daughters of men (Gen 6), the judgment of the flood (Gen 7-9), and the construction of the Tower of Babel (Gen 11), sin amplified and man grew further and further away from God. Sin, which began with one individual, increased to a group level and expanded further to a national level.

After the flood, sin resurfaced for the first time through Ham, but its powers grew to infect all mankind, eventually leading to the construction of the Tower of Babel. Sin truly holds enormous power. Before the flood, it had successfully lured the sons of God to its side. Then, in the Tower of Babel incident, it orchestrated a powerful community that attempted to encroach upon heaven, God's sacred dwelling place, through the building of a physical city and tower. The members of this humanistic community had cut themselves off from the line of salvation that God had given to mankind and relied on their own wit. Historically, the Tower of Babel incident took place only a little over 100 years after the judgment of the flood. In so little time, sin had infected and covered the world like a poisonous mushroom.

Calculation:
The sum of the patriarchs' ages at the birth of their first sons from the time Arpachshad was born to Shem (two years after the flood) until Peleg was born to Eber (Gen 11:10, 12, 14, 16).
2 (years after the flood) + 35 + 30 + 34 = 101

Noah and Shem had been saved from the dreadful flood and were alive when the Tower of Babel was being built. Noah had witnessed how the world had been judged because of its overflowing sins. His righteous heart was torn once again as he watched men's evil intentions at work in building up the tower.

Noah probably spent the 350 years of his life after the flood the same way he had previously lived: expending all his energy in preaching to the successive generations about the divine preservation of this earth through God's administration of redemption.

2. God Preserved Faith throughout the History of Sin and Wickedness.

God preserved the framework of faith, the last remaining holy stump, so that the history of redemption might not be cut short even in the midst of the ever-expanding work of sin from after the fall of Adam until the Tower of Babel incident in Genesis 11 (Isa 6:13; 2 Pet 2:5).

God had clothed Adam and Eve with garments of skin before He banished them from Eden (Gen 3:21). With respect to Cain, God put a mark on him as a sign of God's protection, to prevent him from being killed after He had cursed him to become a wanderer on the earth (Gen 4:15). For Noah, God preserved his family and proclaimed the message of blessings and prosperity once again through the covenant of the rainbow (Gen 8:17; 9:1, 7).

God did not fail to demonstrate the bright future of redemptive history even in the midst of continuous judgments, reaffirming His intention to save mankind. The light of God's grace and love shone even more beautifully through His judgments and punishments. His grace abounded even more where sin increased (Rom 5:20). The structure of faith would not have remained at all without God's grace.

3. The Beginning of a New Work of Salvation through Abraham

The history of redemption that had begun to unfold in Genesis 12 after judgment upon the Tower of Babel, encountered a revolutionary turning point. Up until that point, God had worked universally with all of mankind. Now, He was beginning a new history of redemption by electing just one ordinary man Abraham, son of an idol maker from Ur of the Chaldeans. Consequently, it appears that the prospect of redemptive work had narrowed significantly in Genesis 12. However, the election of Abraham was a critical event in the history of redemption because it opened the first gateway for the coming of the seed of the woman promised in Genesis 3:15.

From this point, God's administration for the redemption of all nations on the face of this earth was to be fulfilled through Abraham, the chief focus of the genealogy of Shem. As God had promised when He called him, Abraham began as one man, but he ultimately became the starting point for the salvation of all nations.

> Ezekiel 33:23–24 Then the word of the Lord came to me saying, [24]"Son of man, they who live in these waste places in the land of Israel are saying, 'Abraham was only one, yet he possessed the land; so to us who are many the land has been given as a possession.'"
> Genesis 12:3 [The Lord said to Abram,] "And I will bless those who bless you, and the one who curses you I will curse. And in you all the families of the earth shall be blessed."
> Hebrews 11:12 Therefore, also, there was born of one man, and him as good as dead at that, as many descendants as the stars of heaven in number, and innumerable as the sand which is by the seashore.

When Abraham was 99 years old, God renewed His covenant and gave him and his wife, Sarai, new names. Abram received the name *Abraham*, meaning "father of a multitude of nations" (Gen 17:4–5; Rom 4:17), and Sarai received the name *Sarah*, meaning "mother of nations" (Gen 17:15–16). After the coming of Jesus Christ, Abraham's fatherhood expanded to include all those who believe in Jesus Christ (Rom 4:11–12, 16, 23–24; Gal 3:7, 29).

The God whom the Israelites had encountered through their own history is not just the God of the Jews. As evident in Genesis 1 to Genesis 11, He is the God of the universe. He created the universe; His providence is over all mankind; He sustains the world. In addition, after God's covenant with Abraham, the history of Abraham's descendants was not theirs alone. Their history was an extension of the history of redemption, which contains God's plans to fulfill His covenant with Abraham and eventually achieve

salvation for all mankind.

The work recorded in Genesis 1 through Genesis 11 was only a prelude, a mere introduction, to Abraham's calling. The actual redemptive work began with Abraham in Genesis 12. The genealogy of Shem recorded in Genesis 11 was the dawning of the history of redemption that revealed "the appearance of Abraham for the salvation of the whole world."

Now, God had cut the ribbon for His plan to save all mankind through Abraham (Gen 18:18; 22:18). This was the glimpse of hope, a streak of daylight shining upon times of despair after the Tower of Babel incident, and Abraham stood at the center of that hope and light. God's redemptive work that had begun to progress with the election of Abraham was completed through the coming of the Messiah from among the descendants of Abraham. God's covenant with Abraham, "And in your seed all the nations of the earth shall be blessed" (Gen 22:18), did not pertain only to Abraham; it was a covenant to be fulfilled when the Messiah comes as a descendant of Abraham.

The genealogy in Genesis 11 is testimony to the trustworthiness and faithfulness of God, who remembered and fulfilled His promise of salvation through the seed of the woman despite man's disbelief and disobedience (Rom 3:3; 2 Cor 1:18; 1 Thess 5:24; 2 Tim 2:13; Heb 10:23). The genealogy of the godly descendants will endure until the Second Coming of our Lord. We must strive to understand God's divine administration of redemption properly, which He seeks to fulfill in the end time, so that we may become godly descendants whom He seeks.

Now, there is only One whose coming we must anticipate: Jesus Christ, who died on the cross and was resurrected for us. On the day He returns in all His glory, the work of redemption—which began with the calling of Abraham—will see its final consummation. At that time, the devil, who stood against God and interfered with His work of salvation, will be thrown into the lake of fire and brimstone (Rev 20:10). I pray today that we gather all of our strength to race toward the kingdom of heaven with our hopes focused on that day of final victory.



מדבר צין הוא קדש
ים המלח
שבט
מדבר סיני
מדבר פארן
מדבר שור
ארץ פלשתים
באר שבע
שמעון
שבט
לוח המסעות במדבר
אשר על פי ה׳ יסעו ועל פי ה׳ יחנו
א׳ רעמסס
ב׳ סכת
ג׳ אתם
ד׳ פיהחירת
ה׳ מרה
ו׳ אילם
ז׳ ים סוף
ח׳ מדבר סין
ט׳ רפקה
יו׳ אלוש
יא׳ רפידים
יב׳ מדבר סיני
יג׳ קבית התאוה
יד׳ חצרת
טו׳ רתמה
טז׳ רמן פרץ
יז׳ לבנה
יח׳ רסה
יט׳ קהלתה
ך׳ הרספר
ךא׳ תרדה
ךב׳ מקהלה
ךג׳ תחת
ךד׳ תרח
ךה׳ מתקה
ךו׳ חשמנה
ךז׳ מסרות
ךח׳ בני יעקן
ךט׳ הרהגדגד
ל׳ יטבתה
לא׳ עברנה
לב׳ עציון גבר
לג׳ מדבר צין
לד׳ הרהדר
לה׳ צלמנה
לו׳ פונן
לז׳ אבת
לח׳ דיבן גד
לט׳ עלמן דבלי
מ׳ תרי עברים
מא׳ ערבת מואב

Conclusion

The history of God's work of redemption is not separate from the history of this world. The two are intertwined. The history of redemption has been developing and unfolding since before the beginning of time in accordance with God's pleasing will and by His absolute sovereignty. The significance of secular history lies in the fact that it is a means to fulfill God's purpose in the history of redemption. The history of this world transformed continuously from age to age as cultures developed. Yet, God's work of redemption continued to flow through this ever-changing history and will not cease until the consummation of salvation that comes with the return of Jesus Christ. In light of this, we must discover the revelation of redemption that flows ceaselessly through the genealogies in Genesis. Then, we will be able to dig up the treasures of God's amazing providence of salvation hidden within.

Furthermore, God's administration of redemption is also hidden throughout each and every chapter and verse of the Bible (Luke 24:25–27, 44; John 5:39, 45–47), and surely it will be fulfilled according to the Word of God (Isa 55:10–11; Matt 5:18; 24:35; Luke 21:33). The Word is the beginning, the plan, the blueprint, and the powerful force that propels God's history of redemption to its fulfillment (Rev 1:17; 22:13). God created the entire universe through this Word (Ps 33:6, 9; John 1:3, 10), and the Word upholds and guides it (Rom 11:36; Heb 1:3). It is also the Word that judges the fallen world in the end (2 Pet 3:7). As the end approaches, God's Word will fill all the earth (Isa 11:9; Hab 2:14), and this wonderful vision is prophesied in many places in the Bible.

Ezekiel 47 compares the evangelical movement of salvation manifested through Jesus Christ to water flowing out of the temple. The temple was a reservoir, and the water in it was not still, but flowing. This is symbolic of the ever-flowing living waters. This water increased, and as it increased, it trickled out little by little from the temple. In no time, it turned into a great body of water. It reached the great sea, giving life to the dying and causing trees on the banks of the river to bear new fruit without their leaves withering. Everywhere this water reached, even the waters of the sea became fresh, and there were very many fish. Wherever this water went, everything prospered and lived (Ezek 47:8–9). Fishermen would come and go, for there were many fish according to their kinds, like the fish of the Great Sea (Ezek 47:10). By the river on its bank, on one side and on the other, grew all kinds of trees bearing fruit for food every month; they grew leaves for healing (Ezek 47:12). This was all "because their water flows from the sanctuary" (Ezek 47:12).

This is the prophecy that the living waters of God's Word will flow out from the church, the body of Jesus Christ, and give life to all the world and the nations in it (John 4:13–14; 6:63; Rev 22:1–2).

Even now, the spiritual water of life flowing from Golgotha, where Jesus Christ's cross stood, springs up endlessly and continues to flow to every corner of the entire universe to give life. Today, every church throughout the world that proclaims the gospel of the blood shed on the cross (the gospel of life) is a spiritual Golgotha. From there, the living waters continue to break through the grounds of sin to spring up and continuously flow out and increase. Life-giving work is occurring through the living waters in the churches that have the living Word of the cross (1 Cor 1:18), the Word of the precious blood shed on Golgotha for the atonement of all mankind. The soul of one who drinks from the living waters is like a "watered garden" because God directs the path of the water stream from deep underground toward the garden (Isa 58:11; Jer 31:12). The living waters do not cease to flow toward the watered garden. The green pastures are endless. There is no suffering there (Jer 31:12). It is always full of vitality. Our souls are satisfied and our bones strengthened (Isa 58:11), so that our physical health is ensured. Only peace and joy overflow bountifully (Isa 66:12).

The prophet Zechariah received a revelation of the living waters flowing out of Jerusalem toward the eastern sea and the western sea (Zech 14:8; cf. Isa 2:2–4; Mic 4:1–2). The prophet Joel also saw that a spring would go out from the house of the Lord to water the valley of Shittim (Joel 3:18). The valley of Shittim was a barren and arid land where life could not survive, but this barren land will become

abundant with grapes, greenery, and flocks of sheep giving milk through the overflowing waters (Joel 3:18). At one time, the priests mourned because there was nothing in the temple to give as an offering to the Lord (Joel 1:9, 13). But now, the dry land will become a fountain of the living waters that gives life.

A true church needs to become the altar from which the Word of the living waters springs forth so that souls may never thirst again. Jesus Christ is the source of the water of life (Rev 21:6). The Israelites drank the living waters from a rock in the wilderness (Ps 78:16; 105:41). Water poured out when Moses struck the rock. The New Living Translation translates it as "and water gushed out" (Num 20:11). When the water came out of the rock, it gushed out as from a waterfall and formed a river for the millions of people to drink in the wilderness (Ps 105:41). This rock foreshadows Jesus Christ. 1 Corinthians 10:4 confirms "And all drank the same spiritual drink, for they were drinking from a spiritual rock which followed them; and the rock was Christ." Yes, only Jesus Christ is the source of the living waters.

> John 7:37–38 Now on the last day, the great day of the feast, Jesus stood and cried out, saying, "If anyone is thirsty, let him come to Me and drink. 38He who believes in Me, as the Scripture said, 'From his innermost being will flow rivers of living water.'"

Here, the work of the living waters signifies the work of God's Word and of the Holy Spirit. Both the Word and the Holy Spirit come from Jesus. The dry bones came together, received breath, came to life, stood on their feet, and became an exceedingly great army when Ezekiel prophesied as he was commanded to do (Ezek 37:7, 10). Likewise, the breath of life (i.e., the Holy Spirit) works through the Word, and where the living Word is proclaimed, the Holy Spirit works powerfully and works of life occur (Acts 10:44). Therefore, the church where Jesus is alive and His Word actively works is the church of the living waters. That is the kind of church that we strive to be because such is a church where the Holy Spirit powerfully, fervently, and abundantly dwells.

Amos 8:11–13 states,

> "Behold, days are coming," declares the Lord God, "When I will send a famine on the land, not a famine for bread or a thirst for water, but rather for hearing the words of the Lord. And people will stagger from sea to sea, and from the north even to the east; they will go to and fro to seek the word of the Lord, but they will not find it. In that day the beautiful virgins and the young men will faint from thirst."

Likewise, the world is falling deeper into a "famine of the Word," and it is becoming harder and harder to find the Word of the living waters. We need to spark a fundamental movement within the church so that the Word of the living waters may overflow.

Only Jesus Christ is the true Shepherd, who leads us beside quiet waters and to the spring of the living waters (Ps 23:1; John 10:11, 14). He makes us lie down in green pastures, allowing us to eat in abundance without want. Revelation 7:17 states, "For the Lamb in the center of the throne will be their shepherd, and will guide them to springs of the water of life; and God will wipe every tear from their eyes." When we follow our true Shepherd, we will be able to live a life that overflows with blessings eternally.

Now, we greatly anticipate the one who died for us on the cross and was resurrected—the one who leads us to the spring of the living waters, our true Shepherd, Jesus Christ. On the day our Lord gloriously returns, the history of redemption, which began and progressed through the genealogies of Genesis and was manifested through the calling of Abraham, will finally come to its complete fulfillment and fruition. On that day, the devil, who has been challenging God and interfering with His work of salvation until the very end, will be thrown into the lake of fire and brimstone (Rev 20:10).

Let us run our race toward the kingdom of God with our hope firmly focused on that final day of victory. Moses' sincere cry to "remember the days of old, consider the years of all generations" (Deut 32:7) in preparation for entry into Canaan is now resounding in our ears as we also prepare for our entry

into the kingdom of God. This is God's firm command and the voice of His call for us to remember and understand the history of God's work of redemption through the years of all generations in the Bible.

The moment we come to an understanding of God's administration of redemption hidden in the Bible, He will acknowledge us as godly people of faith and as the burning lamp in a world that is covered with the dark clouds of sin and wickedness. God uses the spirit of His godly people as His lamp even in the present day (Prov 20:27). I pray with all my heart that the line of the godly offspring may continue until the prophecy of our Lord's return is fulfilled on this earth. Amen.


מדבר צין חואקרש
ים המלח
מדבר סיני
מדבר פארן
מדבר שור
ארץ פלשתים
שבט
שמעון
שבט
באר שבע
לוח המסעות במדבר
אשר על פי ה׳ סעו על פי ה׳ חנו

Commentaries

Dr. Kyung-Bae Min
Distinguished Professor of Baekseok University
Honorary Professor of Yonsei University

I am grateful for this opportunity to share my thoughts regarding the work of our most honorable and respected pastor, Rev. Abraham Park.

Rev. Park is not the author of many books, yet in this remarkable book I saw his profound ability to write. This book explains the reason for his great ministry and the large church that he pastors, the Pyung Kang Che-il Presbyterian Church. I could not help but think it would be a shame if he does not put more of his great work in writing.

From the beginning pages of this book's profound message, my reaction was tearful prayers and thanksgiving. As I continued to read each page, I was assured, time and time again, that this book, its style and writing, manifests a careful study of the Scriptures and was penned by someone who possesses a profound, in-depth understanding of the Bible. I thought that the author surely has spent years in ceaseless meditation and prayer, for each page is filled with endless inspiration of love and truth. Rev. Park is a minister who has spent many years on his knees in prayer, reading the Holy Scriptures hundreds of times, studying the Hebrew language, and researching a wide range of theological texts. He completed all these works with the enlightenment of the Holy Spirit. His writing, page after page, is typified by his complete reliance on the Holy Scriptures. His writing is candid, and to the point, without unnecessary citations of other works or illustrations. It illuminates the fact that the gospel and message of salvation given to the church cannot be explained by anything other than the canon of the Holy Scriptures. It is rare to find writing like his, containing such a magnanimous message of truth and purity in every carefully selected word. This work is a masterpiece of clarity and truth rarely found in our time. This is why I boldly assure the reader that this book will remain a timeless work that warrants a place on the bookshelves of every church and university.

Rev. Park's knowledge and understanding of the Bible are incomparably profound. All the verses of the Bible seem to be chronologically indexed in his mind—like a vein in the Holy Scripture's inexhaustible gold mine that he has fully mapped. Rev. Park has the uncanny ability and insight to select the most appropriate text that will link and connect the most profound and complex passages that explain God's truth.

Another facet of this book that caught my attention is that it is well organized, written in a form that it is easy to follow, and filled with the fruit of his studies from as early as 1968. He has also shared this message and this method of study since 1983 through his preaching and ministry both at home and abroad. This book is the result of fifty wonderful years during which his ministry developed and has been supported by over forty years of prayer and extensive meditation. In this light, this book is a solemn notice to our academic world.

My description of this book's core value begins here. I had once given the excuse that I would have to think about writing a review of this book because I thought it impertinent for a "historical theologian" to write a review on a book that deals extensively with "biblical theology," and especially because it deals with Genesis and Old Testament theology. Nonetheless, to my own amazement, as I read the book, I saw that it is truly a work that ought to be deemed the "Magna Carta" of historical theology. The historical interpretations in this book spotlight the beauty of depth and insight found in the pages of the biblical commentary. I do not say this merely because I am a historical theologian, but because I found that the very premise and method of study for historical theology, its actual history, acute discernment of historical writing, and its descriptions are clearly evident in this book. This is a new revelation into the study of

biblical history. Surely, this book sets a new precedent for all future studies of such history. I found this explicitly typified in the first three chapters.

What is even more astounding to me is that Deuteronomy 32:7-8 is the verse that I have always considered as the premise of all of my studies of history. This is the very Scripture verse that Rev. Park has used for the heading of Part 1: "Remember the days of old; consider the years of all generations. Ask your father, and he will inform you, your elders, and they will tell you."

Rev. Park considers this verse as the landmark for this book, and it is a grand premise for his writings of history and theology as well. I have never read any of Rev. Park's writings prior to this occasion, and I am sure that most probably he has never read any of mine. Even if he has, I doubt that he would so easily find where I had made mention of this verse, since it was only a minute part of my work. Therefore, my heart was struck with admiration and wonder when I saw this verse used as the pillar of his work.

With this in mind, you may now understand why I could not put this book down, but read it through again and again. As I reflect back on my initial thoughts about this book, I realize that I would have been greatly disappointed if I had not been asked to write a review of such a great work. Even more disappointing would have been if readers also missed the chance to hear this important message from a person such as I, who has many great things to say about it. Although it may not have been the original intention of the author, this book introduces an innovative method and system of study that qualify it as a model for any study of biblical history in modern times. It is truly a Christian representation of historical philosophy.

The full title of this book is *The Genesis Genealogies: God's Administration in the History of Redemption*. The author affirms that the Book of Genesis is not only an introduction to the entire Bible, but also a blueprint of the history of the redemption of mankind and the world. In this illuminating view of the Genesis account, Rev. Park sees a picturesque and compact version of the Bible—a "micro-Bible." It is like a biblical parallel to the principle of modern biogenetic theory claiming that the development of a microscopic stem cell taken from flesh or bone can become the seed for recreating an entire body. He also purports that a thorough understanding of Genesis will uncover the mysteries of the redemptive history of mankind found elsewhere throughout the Holy Scriptures. Hence, this book can also be properly called "God's Work of Salvation as Viewed through the Genesis Genealogies." It truly is a work that deals with more than just the origin of creation, or Genesis, for it logically organizes the insight of God's work of redemptive history from the Scriptures.

Rev. Park states that faith comes from the past. He argues that the "days of old" refers to a history of God's love and compassion, including the entire process of His redemptive work. These words of wisdom pierce the soul and the core of the Scriptures. To Christians who would view the relationship between faith and history as the central theme of the Word as found in the Scriptures, the entire Bible can be defined as God's "history book." However, many may never have considered this vital point. It may have been avoided in theological discussions due to its relativity and presumed earthliness. The fallacy of pietistic theology, if there is any, is the belief that salvation comes from isolation or alienation from the world. Nonetheless, it is clearly revealed and explained in this book that salvation and God's providence are fulfilled in our day-to-day lives. In other words, this book does not treat faith as mere religious ritual, but makes it widely applicable to everyday life. This is the fulfillment of the long-cherished desire of Kwang Soo Lee, who in 1917 desperately hoped that the Korean church would adopt such thought and reflection. Thus, I say that this book is truly an achievement and work worthy of praise.

Rev. Park discovers the great foundation of historical salvation and redemption from the genealogies of the patriarchs. From his studies, he is able to distinguish God's redemptive plan in the hundreds of years in which each patriarch lived. Furthermore, the manner in which he precisely interprets the names of the patriarchs from the source language is most fascinating; he reveals how the names and their meanings are directly related to the historical circumstances of each patriarch's era. I could not help but marvel at his

skill in subtly applying this new and fresh method of analogy. This perspective allows his readers to view the stories of the patriarchs as a type, not just in light of the stories of their lives, but in their connection to the current generation in our history. The intimacy between the message of the Bible and our reality cannot be explained any more vividly than this. Turning the Bible into a book that is "my story" is the outstanding achievement of this book.

The author unravels the mystery of God's work of redemptive history by connecting each of the many patriarchs' lives, one by one. This brings one to the conclusion that salvation is not accomplished by either accident or interruption. Rather, this kind of historical interpretation confirms that biblical history is a continually developing story in which salvation is fulfilled through a gradual progress, not by sudden change. Rev. Park construes this gradual progress in the revelation that Ezekiel saw by the river Chebar, in which living water trickles from the temple of God, gradually becoming a stream of water, then a river, then a much greater river, and finally a sea. This interpretation allows us to view eschatology as a completion of redemptive history fulfilled in the glorious return of our Lord rather than a fearful judgment that comes abruptly at "the end time." Blessed with this understanding, one can look forward with thanksgiving and praise to the eschatological grace and blessings that are to come. This message reaffirms a gospel that marks Christianity as the religion of thanksgiving, joy, and bright hope. Simultaneously, it is an indirect exclamation of history on earth that exemplifies God's history of life and blessings.

Through devout faith and theology, the author has truly accomplished the great work of overlapping redemptive history with the history of the secular world. This surmounts the early Augustinian dichotomy of redemptive history and secular history that separated Christianity and the secular world. It is a monumental achievement of orthodox theology that avoids schismatic and mystical seclusion. It is amazing that this fact has been excluded from the customary studies of Genesis. If history progresses in a linear path and comes to its completion in the Second Coming of the Lord, then that in itself can become a general system for sacramental and incarnational theology, which are the mainstream theologies today. This belief is accurately highlighted and exalted in this book as the very foundation of the Christian faith, just like the meaning of Rev. Park's title "Hui Sun": the English meaning for *Hui* is "light" or "to shine," and *Sun* is "to spread," "to provide," or "to declare." It is essential for the Korean church to enhance, embrace, and adopt this kind of theology.

This book not only is a guide that takes us into the marvelous depths of the Holy Scripture, but also will be a time-honored work of achievement and deserves attention from all the churches today for its great accomplishment in the theological and biblical study of the genealogies of Genesis.

Dr. Nam-Sik Kim
Chief Editor of Kidok (Christian) Times
Visiting Professor of Chongshin University
Director of the Counseling Missions Research Center of Korea
President of the Presbyterian Church Korea History Association

A book is a summarization of the author's beliefs. It expresses the author's set of beliefs, knowledge, and ideologies, thus becoming the criterion upon which the author receives praise or criticism. An assessment of a person should be based upon primary sources such as his book, thesis, or other writings, not upon secondary sources, for those only serve to assist. I am not an acquaintance of the author. Not only have I not met him, but also I have not seen him from a distance or heard any recordings of his sermons. The only knowledge I had about him was from what I gathered from hearsay.

Coincidentally, I had the opportunity to read this book. Unlike other times, I assumed a critical attitude in reading this book, underlining portions of it as I read. I read carefully and critically with curiosity. I thought, "What could he be saying in this book that is causing so many rumors about him?"

I would like to summarize the characteristics of this book in a few points. First, the book interprets the Bible from the perspective of God's work of redemption. The history of mankind is unfolding according to God's providence and plan for the redemption of mankind. Emphasizing this point, the author narrates the entire book from the perspective of God's work of redemption, in line with the title of the book. This is a clear expression of the author's creed and an indication of the philosophical foundation that he believes and follows.

Second, the author promotes proper understanding of the Book of Genesis. Genesis is the introduction to the Bible, and is the gateway to the study of the Bible. The author chose to explore the core of Genesis, the genealogies (*toledoth*). The genealogies in Genesis are more than simple chronological records of births and deaths, for they work to reveal God's providence for salvation. The author endorses proper understanding of Genesis through his in-depth study of the significance and the flow of the genealogies in view of the history of redemption.

Third, the author allows the Bible to interpret itself. The author indicates in the introduction that he does not intend this book to be "a theological or scholarly piece of work." He is a minister and evangelist. His purpose is not to introduce a theological doctrine, but to introduce subject matters found in the Bible and search for the interpretation within the Bible, which is the most fundamental method of interpretation. There are many books that blur the main point with enumeration of different theories. However, this book brings out the extraordinary from the ordinary by simply following the theme of redemption history and interpreting it through the Bible.

Fourth, the book contains helpful reference inserts. This book introduces other people's views on the subject matter and offers readers the grounds on which to make a proper judgment for themselves. At times, authors tend to assert that their view is the best and foremost, but this book introduces differing views along with the author's standpoint and thus broadens the readers' scope of understanding.

Fifth, the book is written in simple, everyday language. The author explains that the book is a compilation of his sermons. Perhaps this is why the book is written in colloquial style and contains the liveliness of a sermon, as if it were being preached from the pulpit. The language we use to communicate needs to be a language used in daily life, and this book does an excellent job at utilizing the advantages of such method of communication.

The book is soundly structured and well edited. The length of the book has the merit of being adequate for the readers to read without feeling burdened. However, I would like to suggest two places for

improvement. First, as I noted, the book is written in colloquial form, but it uses some footnotes. Footnoting is not mandatory in this kind of book, and it could act as a distraction that breaks the book's equilibrium. It may have been better if the book had focused solely on the presentation of the message without using footnotes*. Second, I wish that the book were longer. I believe that the book could have provided greater strength to the readers had it been written in greater detail.

I was left with many question marks after reading this book, and I wish to share a few. First, why is the author of this book the object of so much criticism? I too had a preconception about the author acquired from biased information. Nevertheless, I became confused and even bothered with the question of why he became subject to such criticism. For instance, most scholars generally claim that it took Noah 120 years to build the ark, but the book clearly demonstrates, on the basis of the Bible, that it did not take 120 years. I find it regrettable that the truth about an author who attempts to interpret the Bible by using the Bible has been so misunderstood by many people all this time.

Second, why are the critics silent now? This book was first released on October 27, 2007. If there is a problem with this book, the critics should have brought it up and indicated the specific problems with the author's beliefs by now. Why are they so quiet?

Third, is it not time for proper and just assessment to be made? Criticism should be based on the person's primary sources, not upon the basis of someone else's criticism. Although there are impartial critics out there, we cannot deny that there are also many ill-willed critics and those who make criticizing others their profession.

After reading this book, I was struck with disappointment as I realized that the Korean religious community does not make sufficient effort to confront the actual source or subject matter in order to gain proper understanding and make proper assessment of the truth. Furthermore, I find it regrettable that preconceptions, personal relationships, and politics play larger roles as the pivot point of judgment when the Bible, the Word of God, should be the criterion of all judgments.

Now, it is time for us to take the path of reconciliation. God has bestowed upon us the duty to live in harmony (2 Cor 5:18–19; Col 1:20; 1 Thess 5:13). We must reveal what must be revealed and apologize where apologies are necessary, so that we may walk hand in hand toward reconciliation. It is my desire that this book may become the priming factor that draws up the work of reconciliation.

* Footnotes are now listed as Endnotes (pp 244–46)

Dr. Young-Bae Cha
Former President of the Chongshin University

The Bible is the Word of the living God. If the Bible did not exist, all mankind would remain in darkness without any hope. The Book of Genesis is not only the introduction to the Bible, but also the basis of the principle of salvation recorded throughout the Bible. Without knowing Genesis, we cannot come to understand the core of the Bible. Genesis is composed of ten genealogies (*toledoth*). Thus, by studying these genealogies in Genesis, we can fathom God's will for salvation, which permeates the whole Bible.

This book examines the critically important Genesis genealogies from the perspective of salvation. What a welcoming shock it was to read this book for the first time! I could not contain my surprise, because although Rev. Abraham Park is over eighty years old, the depth of his book exceeds all imagination.

There have been many books, both domestic and international, dealing with the genealogies in Genesis. In many ways, this book stands on par with the other books. However, I regard *The Genesis Genealogies* as unrivaled in the subject of its study. Rev. Park's book chronologically organizes the lives of all the people who appear in the genealogies, from Adam to Abraham. This would have been a difficult task even for the expert theologians in this field of study. Therefore, it is an even greater feat for an aged pastor to organize such a complex genealogy and create an accurate timeline. Furthermore, because the book is Bible-centered and written from the perspective of salvation, Jesus Christ is unmistakably revealed in every corner of the book. Given that the author was able to organize such an extensive and sophisticated subject, it is evident that he has dedicated much time to conduct comprehensive research.

A book reveals an author's ideology. This book clearly manifests the fact that the author's faith is based on the Bible and the gospel. From my reading of *The Genesis Genealogies*, I believe that Rev. Abraham Park is a man of the gospel, and that his faith is sound because it seeks to reveal "only Jesus." This book will help wipe away all the misunderstandings about its author.

It is fortunate for the churches in Korea that a book containing such precious information is receiving the spotlight during increasingly dark times. It is a great blessing from God. I highly recommend this book with the sincere hope that it will become widely read by pastors and laypersons alike, and that it will play a critical role in the movement of the Korean churches' return to the Word of God. I pray for the overflowing blessing from the triune God for all those who read this book.



Young-Bae Cha

Dr. Youngyup Cho
Professor of the Kyeyak Graduate School of Theology

I offer my sincere congratulations to Rev. Abraham Park for introducing his precious work *The Genesis Genealogies: God's Administration in the History of Redemption* to the church of Korea on this fiftieth year of his ministry.

I got a glimpse of the author's character, faith, and scholastic attitude as I read his introduction, where he says that although this book "may be inadequate as fruit presented before God" and "is certainly not a theological or scholarly piece of work," he asks readers to "read this book with a Christlike heart of understanding, forgive any awkward sentences, and give generous tolerance to any unintended mistakes." He continues, "When Peter asked, 'Lord, how often shall my brother sin against me and I forgive him?' Jesus answered, 'I do not say to you, up to seven times, but up to seventy times seven' (Matt 18:21–22). I ask that you overlook my shortcomings with the love and mercy of Christ. If anything has been accomplished through this inadequate servant, I confess that it was not the work of this eighty-year-old sinner, but completely the work of the Lord."

I started to read this book with skepticism, wanting to find out and understand who Rev. Park really is because I had come across writings of many people that accuse and criticize him in the United States and in Korea. By scrutinizing this book from the first page to the last, I was able to see that he has critically and accurately studied the Genesis genealogies from the perspective of the history of redemption. Moreover, he has compiled the book in conjunction with the Scripture verses. I believe that this is just one of the examples that show how Rev. Park has a proficient and thorough understanding of the Bible.

I joyfully recommend this book and pray that whoever reads it, whether professor, minister, theological student, or layperson, will be inspired and give thanks for the grace of God's work of redemption and return unto Him all the glory.



Youngyup Cho

Rev. Tae-Deuk Lim
Senior Pastor of Dae-Myung Church in Daegu
Former Moderator of the Hap-dong General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church in Korea

I wholeheartedly congratulate Rev. Abraham Park, senior pastor of Pyung Kang Che-il Church, for completing and publishing *The Genesis Genealogies* in the year of "Jubilee," denoting fifty years of his ministry. Knowing that leaving behind a book of written words is a far more challenging and difficult task than mere utterances, I believe that this work is the fruit of a pastor who has read the Holy Scriptures hundreds of times.

The Genesis Genealogies chronologically sequences the various figures that appear in Genesis, examines the succession of faith and the succession of disbelief, profoundly probes into the environments and backgrounds of each and every period on the foundation of the Holy Scriptures, and imparts a clear understanding of the difference between Cain's genealogy in the succession of disbelief and Seth's genealogy in the succession of faith. In addition, from the lens of God's redemptive history, the book unravels the legendary course behind the separation of Abraham, the central figure of the Genesis genealogies, from the world, insightfully explaining it based on the Scriptures. Rev. Park's ability to present such profundity in a book that is interesting and easy for anyone to read and understand is truly the culmination of much toil.

The Genesis Genealogies considers the perplexing aspects of the genealogies posed by researchers of the Scriptures. Rev. Park carefully analyzes the confusion surrounding the view that since Noah's flood, man's life span was shortened to 120 years, which many have incorrectly understood as the time period that Noah took to build the ark; it explains this misperception without any bias by analyzing the Scriptures in a way that any layperson can easily understand. This book, partly because of its profound research of the Holy Scriptures, will powerfully convict those who are in doubt.

All these years, due to unjust misconceptions, Rev. Abraham Park has been negatively judged by the Korean Christian community and certain groups of people; this has resulted in a veiling of the truth about him and has thus prevented his faith and character from being known as they should be known. Those who actually meet him and directly witness his ministry often fall in love with the soundness and purity of his faith and with the power of the Word that he preaches as he preaches only of Jesus Christ. He is a man of humility who always speaks of how thankful he is that "such an unworthy man" like himself can serve by preaching the glorious gospel of Jesus Christ beyond his eighty years of age.

Personally, I had always hoped for Rev. Abraham Park's true character to be revealed as it should be; now, through this book, *The Genesis Genealogies*, it will be, albeit partially, known to the world.

I encourage all who desire to live a life of faith centered on the Scriptures, as well those who wish to inherit from the line of godly succession, to read this book many times. Having recognized the fact that the descendants of unbelief will gradually drift away from the realm of God's blessing, and with the sincere hope that those who read this book will continue the genealogy of the godly descendants, I recommend this book with the utmost joy.



Tae-Deuk Lim

Dr. Andrew J. Tesia
President of the Research Institute of Reformed Theology

Everyone who has received salvation, including laypeople, pastors with a special calling, and theologians, must continue to study the inspired revelation, the Word of God, throughout their lives and apply what they have learned. Just as food is essential for the sustenance of life, this effort is essential for our spiritual survival. Among the various approaches available for correct understanding and application of the Word, total trust and faith in the Word as well as persistent effort and research are imperative. This is an absolute calling that all Christians must respond to in gratitude for the Lord's grace and love. Therefore, all Christians (including pastors and theologians), as debtors to God's grace, must always walk with the Word as the deer pants for the water brooks (Ps 42:1). It is not an easy task to discover a coherent theme and gain penetrating insight on the revealed Word. This is because of the long duration of time, historical circumstances, and the varied experiences and educational backgrounds of the authors during the recording of the inspired Word. It is impossible to comprehend God's profound will with our limited capacity, even through persistent readings and studies of the Word. At the Second Coming of the Lord, in the last days, when the perfect comes, the partial will be done away (1 Cor 13:10). I sincerely long for the day of the Lord's coming. Maranatha!

Recently, Rev. Abraham Park attempted something that no one has attempted before, through two books: *The Genesis Genealogies* and *The Covenant of the Torch*. They are sure to astonish the world.

I first met Rev. Park about ten years ago at a world missions conference that I attended through the invitation of my friend Rev. Andrew Phipps. I was greatly blessed as I listened to Rev. Park, through the powerful work of the Holy Spirit, preach vividly about Jesus Christ's suffering and crucifixion. I later heard some negative criticism against Rev. Park, and so I became reserved and watched him from a distance to discern what kind of person he is. Over the past ten years, I have heard his sermons about four times. I was greatly inspired and truly received grace each time I heard his messages. My soul, which had dried up from conventional faith, felt revived, like a fish thrown back into the water. The more I observed Rev. Park, the more I lamented that such a godly and faithful man and true pastor has to go through the frustration of being misunderstood. Then one day, Rev. Phipps gave me two manuscripts that Rev. Park authored. I read them right away. I could not put them down until I finished reading them. They are simply marvelous. After reading them, I was deeply ashamed that I had not completely accepted Rev. Park as a true servant of God. Hence, with an apologetic heart, I write this commentary.

Rev. Park uses the covenantal links to dynamically unfold the enormous biblical discourse, which no one can come close to endeavoring, from the perspective of God's redemptive plan. He logically and perfectly depicts this theme as the central theme of Christian theology as well as the theme of his own faith and theological belief. This surely is the result of his lifelong devotion to prayer and his study of the Word with gratitude for the Lord's grace. He has read the Bible hundreds of times since his calling, and his books are compilations of the Word of God and the spiritual mysteries of the Bible that he was awoken to through the process. Through the two books, we pastors and theologians will have to examine ourselves to see if we have lived our lives fulfilling the tasks we were given. At times, we must lend our ears to his discussions and confront the challenges.

First, by clearly organizing the Bible from the salvation and covenant perspective, Rev. Park has attempted something that has not been attempted during the two thousand years of the church's history. There are countless biblical commentaries and interpretations available. Furthermore, many pastors are studying and preaching the Bible based on various existing theological frameworks, typically those based

on Calvinism and orthodox theology founded upon conservative faith. Nevertheless, one cannot help but be amazed at Rev. Park's work, which approaches the Bible, the original text of Christianity, as a great discourse and unfolds it coherently from the covenantal perspective. His two books truly reveal the essence of his immense theological beliefs and the perfect and logical development of his competence. More than anything, it is shocking to see a man of little scholarship (as he confesses to be) explain the profound Word in such a clear and easy way. It is amazing to see how both *The Genesis Genealogies* and *The Covenant of the Torch* are so perfectly arranged and harmonized. The mathematical calculations of the chronological years in history since the time of Adam cause readers to marvel at his immense effort and achievement, although further discussions may be needed as new archaeological discoveries are made. His achievement is truly a stern admonition to pastors and theologians who profess to be what they call "conservative" but have spent and are spending their time in denominational power struggles rather than working to fulfill their God-given tasks! A tearful, contrite heart is required.

Second, Rev. Park is now in his early eighties, but in both *The Genesis Genealogies* and *The Covenant of the Torch* he pours out the spiritual mysteries of the Bible that he was awoken to in a clear, detailed, and powerful literary style. Readers will be overtaken by a magical spell of continuous tension and anticipation that leaves them breathless and motionless. Above all, his literary style has powerful spiritual charisma that attracts the readers' attention. I believe that this is because Rev. Park himself has lived his whole life captured by the Word. Hence, his sermons call to mind the great "Prince of Preachers" who shook up not only England but also all the rest of the world in the mid-nineteenth century, Charles Haddon Spurgeon. Spurgeon was faced with the challenges of a time that was rapidly inclining toward the liberal left, and solitarily he poured out the Word of God into the minds of people through his sermons from the pulpit and his written works. The thousands who congregated at the London Central Baptist Church were captivated by his sermons as they listened breathlessly, with the exception of occasional bursts of acclamation and shouts of joy. The Word of grace that he had received he proclaimed with great strength and zeal, like a spiritual lion's roar. Unfortunately, he spent long, heartbreaking years facing much dissension, misunderstandings, disputes, and refutations. Nevertheless, with conviction in the Word of God, he pushed on with his pastoral ministry, standing firmly upon the orthodox belief of Calvinism.

Language represents one's beliefs. In that respect, Rev. Park may actually be the wizard of language that the Lord has sent to us during these turbid times where the Word of God has become scarce, and good and evil hard to distinguish. Despite his advanced age, his skill and ability to freely narrate the Word of God in his own words stand unrivaled. He is undeniably a faithful servant of God, completely captured by the Word and inspired by salvation.

Third, the foundation of Rev. Park's faith and theology was established through unspeakable suffering and affliction. Through times of trial and isolation he looked only upon God and trusted only in Him. He concentrated solely on faithfully raising his sheep—the congregation entrusted to him. He was captivated by a strong sense of calling and was unable to escape God's hands even for one moment. He spent many years in solitude as a result of unfounded accusations and jealousy. Nevertheless, he fully dedicated himself to the Lord and is a guardian of Calvinism, which holds biblical inspiration in one hand and God's sovereign authority in the other. As is well known, St. Augustine spent his youth in dissipation and pagan philosophy. He was even dedicated to Manichaeism at one time. However, after he met the Lord, he put an end to his old way of life and completely dedicated himself to the Lord. He gave thanks for the grace and love of the Lord of creation and found peace through repentance. Who among us today can criticize him, ostracize him, and condemn him as a libertine or a heretic? The grace and blessings that the church has received through him over the past fifteen hundred years of church history are immeasurable.

How his *Confessions* have consoled many Christians, especially those who were struggling! He is considered one of the few preeminent figures of church history. There is no such thing as a perfect person in this world. I find Rev. Park's two books to be as moving as St. Augustine's *Confessions*, and readers will discover a yearning for God burning like an active volcano.

Fourth, the core of Christian theology is the progression from prophecy to fulfillment toward completion through the interpretation of the Bible using the Bible. At the center of this development is the variety of types that appear in the Old Testament, Christ's suffering and crucifixion, and completion through the second coming in the end. Through his great suffering and trials Rev. Park has developed a strong yearning for the return of the Lord and His glory. This is illustrated in his description of the patriarchs from Abraham to Isaac, Jacob, and Joseph, and to Moses and Joshua after the exodus. It will be depicted in greater detail in books to follow. Therefore, his understanding of the biblical history of redemption, which is the covenantal belief, is based completely on the Bible. This is possible because he was educated and trained in a conservative theological seminary and denomination. That is why, even in his advanced age, he has embarked on this great project that no one else has dared to attempt. Truthfully, who among us, whether pastor or theologian, can coherently unravel this great discourse?

Rev. Park's well-versed knowledge of God's Word, the Bible, throws a great challenge to theologians whose knowledge is limited to one area of theology, for the Bible needs to be understood thoroughly and in its entirety. Theologians generally are very proficient in the areas of their study and research, but Rev. Park shows his spiritual power and knowledge in all areas of theology, which enables him to freely and appropriately use different parts of the Bible.

This is a lifelong project that Rev. Park has solely endeavored as part of his unyielding vow with God in response to the grace and love that he has received. His head and heart are filled with the Bible and the fervent zeal to think and live with the Word. In this sojourner's world we have discovered an old servant struggling to pour himself out as a drink offering on the Lord's altar, just like the apostle Paul.

Fifth, the well-organized logic and real challenges and applications of Rev. Park's work are distinguished yet natural. The details and motivating power come from his many years of experience and lifelong pastoral ministry.

His applications are concise and entirely based on the Bible. Although he uses very concise and plain language, his sentences contain a concentrated form of theological depth that no other pastor or theologian can mimic. He addresses highly debated issues that even theologians cannot easily address, such as the relationship between Abraham and Jacob, the relationship between Judah and Joseph, and the various themes that develop through Moses' life. His discoveries that the duration of the construction of Noah's ark was less than the well-accepted 120 years and of the forty-two camp sites during the Israelites' wilderness journey are the first of their kind since the time of Noah and Moses. This is a marvelous and celebrated achievement unimaginable even for a scholar who has dedicated his entire life to the study of the Bible and theology.

Unfolding the great discourse using a concise sermon format and storytelling style stands out in the world of theology, which places importance on logic and proof based on scholarship. Rev. Park unravels this discourse smoothly and with the sincerity of a grandfather narrating a story to his grandchild. His thorough insight of the Bible gives him the agility to maneuver through it and the ability to visually illustrate the Old and New Testaments as with a computer. His analysis of heretofore unresolved theological issues can easily be considered a masterpiece.

Finally, what is most urgently needed in all the churches today? Proper understanding of the Bible and its application in life are necessary to overcome the long period of stagnation. This is the goal that the

church needs to pursue in the rapidly changing twenty-first century in order to recover the lost glory of old. For this purpose, we must first learn to live out the Word of God, develop our theological awareness, and revitalize the redemptive movement. Frankly, an understanding of the inspired Word of revelation, the Bible, and effective application in life are the universal hope of all pastors. Learning to effectively deliver the Word from the pulpit is a lifelong assignment for pastors. To be able to do this, they must first gain thorough knowledge of the Bible. This knowledge refers not merely to literal interpretation, but also to the ability to see the entire flow and to accurately reveal the meaning of each part. Another crucial task is to shed light on how the revelations of the Bible are fulfilled in history. Paradoxically, we are living in an age where the Word of God is overflowing and scarce at the same time. Thus, we must fathom the depth of God's will through the redemptive and covenantal approach. Thus, I joyfully recommend Rev. Park's *The Genesis Genealogies* and *The Covenant of the Torch* to all the churches of the world, for they not only satisfy the spiritual aspirations of thirsting Christians, but also are an absolute necessity for those who desire a more mature life of faith. I pray that you read these books once and receive a double portion of blessings.



Andrew J. Tesia

Dr. Horiuchi Akira
Representative Pastor of Grace Missions Evangelical Free Church of Japan
Chairman of the Food for the Hungry International (F. H. I.)
Chief Director of King's Garden in Mie (social welfare organization)

After reading this book, I was not only able to feel the very message that the Bible delivers to us through historical facts, but also able to obtain an understanding of things that were not possible through other books. Furthermore, through the insights given by this book, I felt my heart overflowing with joy and vitality from studying the Bible, the Word of God. As a result, faith will not remain as stagnant knowledge, but will become apparent in life and action. The life of faith will not only remain as words, but applied through works in everyday life.

I have had fellowship with the author upon the basis of biblical faith and observed his life and the formation of his church. I have seen and heard him from close and far away, and learned much from his attitude of faith. There have been many people who criticized the author's sermons and ministry, but the author truly loves God and his neighbors, and consistently testifies that the Bible is God's Word. One of the characteristics that stand out in this book is the author's interpretation of the Bible based on deep spirituality and abundant Biblical knowledge like the works of F. B. Meyer.

I have not seen any of the factors for which the author suffered criticism in my long-time relationship with him. Rather, the author and his church have inspired the congregation of our church to read the Bible carefully and diligently, trust in God's promises, pray, serve the Lord faithfully, and expend our efforts for evangelism, leading people to Christ for salvation. Consequently, our church pushed forward to become a church that loves Jesus and our neighbors, which resulted in the births of eight local churches.

As I recommend this book, I pray that every reader of this book may discover the great work and truth of our God the Creator, who works in the midst of those who believe and be filled with God's abundant blessings.

Bibliography

Allen, Clifton J., ed. *The Broadman Bible Commentary*. Vol. 1. Rev. ed. Nashville: Broadman, 1969.

Alter, Robert. *The Five Books of Moses: A Translation with Commentary*. New York: W. W. Norton, 2004.

Asimov, Isaac. *Asimov's Guide to the Bible*. 2 vols. in 1. New York: Avenel Books, 1981.

Boice, James Montgomery. *Genesis: An Expositional Commentary*. Vol. 1. Grand Rapids: Zondervan, 1982.

Brown, Francis. *The New Brown, Driver, Briggs, Gesenius Hebrew and English Lexicon: With an Appendix Containing the Biblical Aramaic*. Peabody, MA: Hendrickson, 1979.

Calvin, John. *Commentaries on the First Book of Moses Called Genesis*. Vol. 1. Translated by John King. Grand Rapids: Baker, 1989.

———. *Commentaries on the Gospel According to John [1–11]*. Translated by William Pringle. Grand Rapids: Baker, 1989.

Cassuto, U. *A Commentary on the Book of Genesis: Part 1, From Adam to Noah*. Translated by Israel Abrahams. Jerusalem: Magnes, 1961.

Cho, David Yonggi. *Commentary on the Genesis I*. Seoul: Seoul Logos, 1996.

Delitzsch, Franz. *New Commentary on Genesis*. Vol. 2. Minneapolis: Klock & Klock Christian Publishers, 1978.

Disciples Publishing House, ed. *The Grand Bible Commentary: With Comprehensive and Synthetic Exegetical Study Methods*. 16 vols. Seoul: Bible Academy, 1991–1993.

———. *The Oxford Bible Interpreter*. 130 vols. Seoul: Bible Study Material Publisher, 2002.

Driver, S. R. *The Book of Genesis*. London: Methuen, 1904.

Fausset, A. R. *Fausset's Bible Dictionary*. Grand Rapids: Zondervan, 1979.

Freeman, Travis R. "A New Look at the Genesis 5 and 11 Fluidity Problem." *Andrews University Seminary Studies* 42, no. 2 (2004): 259–86.

Hamilton, Victor P. *The Book of Genesis: Chapters 1–17*. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans, 1990.

Henry, Matthew. *Matthew Henry's Commentary*. 6 vols. Peabody, MA: Hendrickson, 1991.

Holladay, William L. *A Concise Hebrew and Aramaic Lexicon of the Old Testament: Based upon the Lexical Work of Ludwig Koehler and Walter Baumgartner*. Grand Rapids: Eerdmans, 1988.

Kang, C. H. and Ethel R. Nelson. *Discovery of Genesis: How the Truths of Genesis Were Found Hidden in the Chinese Language*. St. Louis: Concordia, 1998.

Kim, Eui-Won. *Heaven, Earth, and the Toledoth of the Patriarchs*. Seoul: Presbyterian General Assembly Education Department, 2004.

Kim, Hee-Bo. *Patriarchal Fathers in the Old Testament*. Seoul: Presbyterian Theological Seminary Press, 1979.

Kim, Suh-Taek. *The Great Flood and the Covenant of the Rainbow*. Seoul: Hong Sung Sa, 1997.

Kim, Sung-Il. *Exploring Origin of the Korean Nation: Discovering the Route of the Shemites*. Seoul: Research Institute for Creation History, 1997.

Klein, Ernest. *A Comprehensive Etymological Dictionary of the Hebrew Language for Readers of English*. New York: Macmillan, 1987.

Koehler, Ludwig, and Walter Baumgartner. *The Hebrew and Aramaic Lexicon of the Old Testament: Study Edition*. Vol. 2. Translated and edited by M. E. J. Richardson. Boston: Brill, 2001.

Külling, Samuel R. *Are the Genealogies in Genesis 5 and 11 Historical and Complete, That Is, without Gaps?* Riehen: Immanuel-Verlag, 1996.
Lange, John Peter. *A Commentary on the Holy Scriptures: Genesis*. Translated and edited by Philip Schaff. Grand Rapids: Zondervan, 1893.
Lee, Byuung-Kyu. *The Commentary on Genesis*. Seoul: Yum Kwang, 1986.
Lee, Sang-Kun. *The Lee's Commentary on the Gospel of Matthew*. Seoul: Presbyterian General Assembly Education Deptartment, 1966.
"A Letter to the Readers: [Discoveries at Ebla]." *The Biblical Archaeologist* 40, no. 1 (March 1977): 2–4.
Leupold, H. G. *Exposition of Genesis*. Vol. 1. Grand Rapids: Baker, 1942.
McGee, J. Vernon. *Genesis: Chapters 1–15*. Nashville: Thomas Nelson, 1991.
Morris, Henry M. *The Genesis Record: A Scientific and Devotional Commentary on the Book of Beginnings*. Grand Rapids: Baker, 1976.
Neufeldt, Victoria, ed. *Webster's New World College Dictionary*. 3rd ed. New York: Macmillan, 1996.
Park, Yune-Sun. *A Commentary on Genesis*. Vol. 1. Seoul: Yung Eum Sa, 1991.
———. *A Commentary on John*. Seoul: Yung Eum Sa, 1966.
Radmacher, Earl D., gen. ed. *The Nelson Study Bible: NKJV*. Edited by Ronald B. Allen. Nashville: Thomas Nelson, 1997.
Sailhamer, John H. *The Expositor's Bible Commentary with the New International Version*. Ed. Frank E. Gaebelein. Vol. 2. Grand Rapids: Zondervan, 1990.
Sarna, Nahum M. *Genesis: The Traditional Hebrew Text with New JPS Translation*. JPS Torah Commentary. Philadelphia: Jewish Publication Society, 1989.
Speiser, E. A. *Genesis*. Anchor Bible 1. Garden City: Doubleday, 1979.
Spence, H. D. M., and Joseph Exell, eds. *The Pulpit Commentary.* Vol. 1, *Genesis, Exodus*. Peabody, MA: Hendrickson, 2004.
Suh, Chul-Won. *The Book of Genesis*. Seoul: Grisim, 2001.
Suk, Won-Tae. *A Commentary on Genesis*. Seoul: Gyung Hyang, 2002.
———. *Complete Sermon Collection*. Vol. 2. Seoul: Gyung Hyang, 1985.
Walton, John H. *Genesis*. NIV Application Commentary. Grand Rapids: Zondervan, 2001.
———, Victor H. Matthews, and Mark W. Chavalas. *The IVP Bible Background Commentary: Old Testament*. Downers Grove, IL: InterVarsity Press, 2000.
Weingreen, J. *A Practical Grammar for Classical Hebrew*. 2nd ed. Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1959.
Wenham, Gordon J. *Genesis 1–15*. Word Biblical Commentary 1. Waco, TX: Word, 1987.
Wone, Yong-Kuk. *A Commentary of Genesis*. Seoul: Se Shin Culture, 1990. Wone, Yong-Kuk. *The Pentateuch*. Rev. ed. Seoul: Lifebook, 2004.
———. *A Dictionary of Biblical Archaeology*. Seoul: Lifebook, 1984.

NOTES

1. A poetic name for Israel meaning “upright one.”
2. The Hebrew word for *profane* is חָנֵף (*ḥānēp*), meaning “inclining away from righteousness.” In Aramaic, the root means “to act falsely toward” or “to act with hypocrisy”; in Akkadian (Amarna letters), “to exercise ruthlessness toward” (Francis Brown, *The New Brown, Driver, Briggs, Gesenius Hebrew and English Lexicon: With an Appendix Containing the Biblical Aramaic* [Peabody, MA: Hendrickson, 1979], 338.).
3. Henry M. Morris, *The Genesis Record: A Scientific and Devotional Commentary on the Book of Beginnings* (Grand Rapids: Baker, 1976), 154.
4. Travis R. Freeman, “A New Look at the Genesis 5 and 11 Fluidity Problem,” *Andrews University Seminary Studies* 42, no. 2 (2004): 266.
5. Samuel R. Külling, *Are the Genealogies in Genesis 5 and 11 Historical and Complete, That Is, Without Gaps?* (Riehen: Immanuel-Verlag, 1996), 30–31.
6. Eui-Won Kim, *Heaven, Earth, and the Toledoth of the Patriarchs* (Seoul: Presbyterian General Assembly Education Department, 2004), 233–34.
7. Matthew Henry, *Matthew Henry’s Commentary* (Peabody, MA: Hendrickson, 1991), 5:20, 141, 275, 806; 6:868–69.
8. “***You brood of vipers:*** This is similar to the Lord’s rebuke toward the Pharisees (Matt 23:23). . . . Though they were confident that they were Abraham’s children, he was telling them that they are actually children of the serpent, the messenger of Satan who tempted Adam in Eden” (Sang-Kun Lee, *The Lee’s Commentary on the Gospel of Matthew* [Seoul: Presbyterian General Assembly Education Department, 1966], 33.).
“I speak the things which I have seen with My Father; therefore you also do the things which you heard from your father: The Jews did what they heard from their father (i.e. the devil)” (Yune-Sun Park, *A Commentary on John* [Seoul: Yung Eum Sa, 1966], 63.).
“You are of your father the devil: What he had twice said more obscurely, he now expresses more fully, that they are *the devil’s children*. . . . He calls them *children of the devil*, not only because they imitate him, but because they are led by his instigation to fight against Christ” (John Calvin, *Commentaries on the Gospel according to John [1–11]*, trans. William Pringle [Grand Rapids: Baker, 1989], 44.).
9. Gordon J. Wenham, *Genesis 1–15*, Word Biblical Commentary 1 (Waco, TX: Word, 1987), 111; Chul-Won Suh, *The Book of Genesis* (Seoul: Grisim, 2001), 238.
10. H. D. M. Spence and Joseph Exell, eds., *The Pulpit Commentary*, vol. 1, *Genesis, Exodus* (Peabody, MA: Hendrickson, 2004), 87; *The Oxford Bible Interpreter.* Edited by Disciples Publishing House (Seoul: Bible Study Material Publisher, 1989), 1:337.
11. *The Oxford Bible Interpreter*, 1:371.
12. Spence and Exell, *Genesis*, 88.
13. Disciples Publishing House, *Oxford Bible Interpreter*, 1:339.
14. Wenham, *Genesis 1–15*, 112; Spence and Exell, *Genesis*, 88.
15. Wenham, *Genesis 1–15*, 112; Spence and Exell, *Genesis*, 88.
16. Wenham, *Genesis 1–15*, 112; Spence and Exell, *Genesis*, 88.
17. Henry M. Morris, *The Genesis Record: A Scientific and Devotional Commentary on the Book of Beginnings* (Grand Rapids: Baker, 1976), 155.

18. John P. Lange, *Commentary on the Holy Scriptures: Critical, Doctrinal and Homiletical—Genesis*, trans. and ed. Philip Schaff (Grand Rapids: Zondervan, 1893), 261.
19. Spence and Exell, *Genesis*, 88.
20. Wenham, *Genesis 1–15*, 112; Spence and Exell, *Genesis*, 88.
21. Spence and Exell, *Genesis*, 88.
22. Henry M. Morris, *The Genesis Record: A Scientific and Devotional Commentary on the Book of Beginnings* (Grand Rapids: Baker, 1976), 252.
23. Eui-Won Kim, *Heaven, Earth, and the Toledoth of the Patriarchs* (Seoul: Presbyterian General Assembly Education Department, 2004), 157.
24. Yune-Sun Park, *A Commentary on Genesis*, vol. 1 (Seoul: Yung Eum Sa, 1991), 123.
25. Wenham, *Genesis 1–15*, 115; *The Grand Bible Commentary: With Comprehensive and Synthetic Exegetical Study Methods*. Edited by Disciples Publishing House. 16 vols (Seoul: Bible Study Material Publisher, 1991), 385.
26. Robert Alter, *The Five Books of Moses: A Translation with Commentary* (New York: W. W. Norton, 2004), 33; Kim, *Heaven, Earth, and the Toledoth of the Patriarchs*, 153.
27. Morris, *The Genesis Record*, 155; Yune-Sun Park, *Commentary on Genesis*, 119.
28. William L. Holladay, *A Concise Hebrew and Aramaic Lexicon of the Old Testament: Based upon the Lexical Work of Ludwig Koehler and Walter Baumgartner* (Grand Rapids: Eerdmans, 1988), 385.
29. Morris, *The Genesis Record*, 155; Park, *Commentary on Genesis*, 119.
30. Wenham, *Genesis 1–15*, 115.
31. Spence and Exell, eds., *Genesis*, 95, Chul-Won Suh, *The Book of Genesis* (Seoul: Grisim, 2001), 232.
32. Spence and Exell, *Genesis*, *95*; *The Oxford Bible Interpreter* (Seoul: Bible Study Material Publisher, 2002), 1:368.
33. Spence and Exell, *Genesis*, 95.
34. Augustine, *Expositions on the Psalms*.
35. Spence and Exell, *Genesis*, 95; Suh, *Book of Genesis*, 235.
36. Wenham, *Genesis 1–15*, 127; Spence and Exell, *Genesis*, 95.
37. Suh, *Book of Genesis*, 237.
38. Spence and Exell, *Genesis*, 95.
39. Ibid.
40. Matthew Henry, *Matthew Henry's Commentary*, 1:40.
41. Ibid., 1:41.
42. Morris, *The Genesis Record*, 155.
43. James Montgomery Boice, *Genesis*: *An Expositional Commentary*, vol. 1 (Grand Rapids: Zondervan, 1982), 292.
44. Ibid.
45. Spence and Exell, *Genesis*, 96; Suh, *Book of Genesis*, 242.
46. Hee-Bo Kim, *Patriarchal Fathers in the Old Testament* (Seoul: Presbyterian Theological Seminary Press, 1979), 31.
47. Spence and Exell, *Genesis*, 96.
48. Boice, *Genesis*, 255–56.
49. Morris, *The Genesis Record*, 161.
50. Suh, *Book of Genesis*, 245; Boice, *Genesis*, 256.
51. Park, *Commentary on Genesis*, 124.
52. Boice, *Genesis*, 256.

53. John H. Walton, *The NIV Application Commentary: Genesis* (Grand Rapids: Zondervan, 2001), 296.
54. J. Wenham, *Genesis 1–15*, 129; Ernest Klein, *A Comprehensive Etymological Dictionary of the Hebrew Language for Readers of English* (New York: Macmillan, 1987), 664.
55. A. R. Fausset, *Fausset's Bible Dictionary* (Grand Rapids: Zondervan, 1949).
56. Victoria Neufeldt, ed., *Webster's New World College Dictionary*, 3rd ed. (New York: Macmillan, 1996), 648.
57. Francis Brown, *The New Brown, Driver, Briggs, Gesenius Hebrew and English Lexicon: With an Appendix Containing the Biblical Aramaic* (Peabody, MA: Hendrickson, 1979), 75; *The Oxford Bible Interpreter* (Seoul: Bible Study Material Publisher, 2007), 1:594.
58. Isaac Asimov, *Asimov's Guide to the Bible*, 2 vols. in 1 (New York: Avenel Books, 1981), 53.
59. Boice, *Genesis*: *An Expositional Commentary*, 335.
60. John Calvin, *Commentaries on the First Book of Moses Called Genesis*, vol. 1, trans. John King (Grand Rapids: Baker, 1989), 320.
61. Sung Il Kim, *Exploring Origin of the Korean Nation: Discovering the Route of the Shemites* (Seoul: Research Institute for Creation History, 1997), 88–93.
62. "A Letter to the Readers: [Discoveries at Ebla]," *The Biblical Archaeologist* 40, no. 1 (March 1977): 2–4. Yong-Kuk Wone, *The Pentateuch*. Rev. ed. (Seoul: Lifebook, 2004), 93.
63. Kim, *Exploring Origin*, 120.
64. Yong-Kuk Wone, *A Dictionary of Biblical Archaeology* (Seoul: Lifebook, 1984), 701–5.
65. Ludwig Koehler and Walter Baumgartner, *The Hebrew and Aramaic Lexicon of the Old Testament: Study Edition*, vol. 2, trans. and ed. M. E. J. Richardson (Boston: Brill, 2001), 1264; *Oxford Bible Interpreter*, 1:637.
66. Spence and Exell, eds., *Genesis*, 171.
67. Ibid.
68. Disciples Publishing House, *The Grand Bible Commentary: With Comprehensive and Synthetic Exegetical Study Methods*, vol. 1 (Seoul: Bible Study Material Publisher, 1991), 457.
69. Wenham, *Genesis 1–15*, 251–52.
70. Ibid., 252.
71. Ibid., 251.
72. Causative verbal form. For example, "He is great" is derived in the Hiphil stem as "He caused to be great" (J. Weingreen, *A Practical Grammar for Classical Hebrew*, 2nd ed. [Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1959], 112.).

INDEX

Page numbers relating to the Excursus 2 table are in Italics.

Aaron, 20
Abel, 42, 59; murder of, 61–62, 93, 98, 99–100, 183; name's meaning, 99; profession of, 75; worship's evolution and, 103
Abraham (Abram), 16, 23, 26, 62; Euphrates crossing by, 156, 159; genealogy of, 38–40, 42–44, 48–52, 54, 92, 132, 144–45, 155, 173, 176–79, 191, 202–08; God's call to, 142, 156, 159, 165, 173–75, 176–78, 182, 193, 200–01, 202–07; Lot's relationship with, 203–04, 206; name's meaning, 176, 211; patriarchs living contemporaneously with, 90–92, 129, 143, 146–47, 152, 156, 162, 176, 178–79; redemptive significance of, 44, 142, 174–79, 182, 191–92, 197, 208–12; separation work by, 133, 156, 159, 165, 173–75, 176–78, 193, 202–07; son's casting out by, 204–06; son's sacrificial offering by, 110, 178, 205–06
Acts: 2:21, 103, 144; 7:4, 203
Adah (wife of Esau), 84
Adah (wife of Lamech), 73–75
Adam, 10; creation of, 42; curse, by God, on, 59–60, 65, 93, 190, 210; death's origins via, 98, 115–16, 117–18, 189; fall of/sin by, 18, 31, 34–35, 37, 42, 44, 55, 61, 64, 81, 93, 95–96, 117, 210; genealogy of, 38–39, 42–43, 45–49, 51–52, 55, 59–60, 88, 91–92, 93–101, 115–18, 183–84, 135; influence/testimony of, 93, 95–98, 115–18, 122, 136; life span of, 89, 94, 95, 97–98, 101, 111, 115; name's meaning, 95; naming of creations/creatures by, 97; patriarchs living contemporaneously with, 48 , 89–90, 99, 102, 105, 107, 110, 113, 120, 122–23, 129–30, 158; worship's evolution and, 103
administration, redemptive: friendship with God and, 163–65; history of, 32–33; Jesus Christ's significance to, 30, 34–37, 48–49, 53, 88, 96, 106, 118–19, 129, 191–92, 207, 211–12, 216–19; patriarchs' significance to, 11–12, 24–25, 38–41, 42, 46; predestination's relevance to, 33, 35–36; separation from sin in history of, 142, 156–59, 165, 173–78, 182, 192–207; worship's evolution and, 103–09, 185. See also Genesis genealogy(ies); redemption
Ahaziah, King (of Judah), 50
Amalek/Amalekites, 71–72, 85
Amaziah, King (of Judah), 50
Amos, 149; 8:11–13, 218
Anah, 85
Ananias, 63, 69
Aram, 147, 177
ark, Noah's: construction of, 122, 125, 130–31, 133–34, 186, 135–38, 141; passengers on, 125–26, 132–33; timeline related to, 135–41
Ark of the Covenant, 20–21
Arpachshad: boundary of faith and, 147, 150–52, 194–95; genealogy of, 52, 92, 132, 143, 146, 147–52, 156, 194–95; genealogy of Cainan in relation to, 52, 154–55; life span of, 92, 147; name's meaning, 147, 194; patriarchs living contemporaneously with, 90, 92, 146–47, 162, 176, 178
Arphaxad. See Arpachshad
Asimov, Isaac, 147
"Ask your father" command (Moses), 16–17, 27; "asking" interpretations in, 25; "fathers" defined in, 24–25; "telling" interpretations in, 26
Asshur/Assyrians, 147–49

Babel (city), 80–81, 85, 160. See also Tower of Babel
Babylon, 52, 70; destruction of, 85, 159
Basemath, 85
Berodach-baladan, King (of Babylon), 70
Bible, accuracy of, 50–53
Boaz, 38–40

Cain, 18, 42; birth/death records in line of, 186–88; city built by, 65–68, 79; curse, by God, on, 66–68, 210; Enoch's genealogy in line of, 66–68, 184–85; Esau's sins in relation to,

85; genealogy of, 40, 47, 49, 58–85, 104, 130–31, 182–92; image and likeness of, 100; Irad's genealogy in line of, 68–70; Ishmael's sins related to, 83, 84–85; Lamech's genealogy in line of, 72–79, 83, 85, 93, 123–24, 185, 209; lifestyle representations in line of, 185–86; longevity records in line of, 93–94, 188–92; Mehujael's genealogy in line of, 70–72; Methushael's genealogy in line of, 72–73; murder by, 60–62, 72, 93, 98, 99–100, 183; name's meaning, 59; Nimrod's sins related to, 79–83, 84–85; Nod settlement by, 64–65; Satan's influence on, 61–65; Seth's line in comparison to line of, 182–92; Seth's line influenced by, 79–85, 129–30, 138; sin's spread via line of, 58–85, 130–31, 209; worship's evolution and, 103
Cainan, 52; perspectives on genealogy of, 154–55
Calvin, John, 156
Canaan (region), 219; Abraham's call, by God, to, 142, 156, 159, 165, 173–75, 176–78, 193, 200–01, 202–07; commands, by Moses, regarding, 16–17, 27; invasion of, 148. See also Israel
Canaan (son of Ham), 82–85, 150
Chedorlaomer, King (of Elam), 148
Christ. See Jesus Christ
1 Chronicles 1:1–4, 24–27, 52
2 Chronicles 3:1–2, 54
commands, by Moses (in Deuteronomy): "Ask your father," 16–17, 25–27; "Consider the years of all generations," 11, 16–17, 22–23, 49, 219; "Remember the days of old" command, 11, 16–17, 18–21, 49, 219
"Consider the years of all generations" command (Moses), 11, 16–17, 49; Christ's Second Coming and, 219; point in time related to, 22; research/study implications in, 23
1 Corinthians: 10:4, 218; 15:10, 196; 15:51–54, 119
2 Corinthians: 1:5, 125; 5:14, 198; 7:11, 200
Covenant of the (rain)bow, 81, 134, 162, 210
creation: groaning of, 34; of heaven and earth, 42–43; of man, 42; as theme of redemptive history, 30, 38
Cush, 84

David, King (of Israel), 13, 25, 54, 68; genealogy of, 38–40, 50; as "man of God," 72, 196
Deuteronomy: 9:14, 71; 26:5, 177; 32:7, 9, 26; "Ask your father" command in, 16–17, 24–27; "Consider the years of all generations" in, 11, 16–17, 22–23, 49, 219; "Remember the days of old" command in, 11, 16–17, 18–21, 49, 219
the devil. See Satan
divine administration: meaning of, 32; predestination of, 33, 35–36. See also administration, redemptive

earth, creation/genealogy of, 42–43
Eber: Euphrates crossing by, 156–59, 167, 196; genealogy of, 48–49, 52, *91*, 146, 151, 156–62, 154; life span of, 135, 156, 157, 160, 161, 163; name's meaning, 156, 196; patriarchs living contemporaneously with, *91–92*, 146, 162, 176; redemptive significance of, 248, 156–59
Ebla, 157–58
Ecclesiastes 8:13, 161
Eden. See Garden of Eden
Edomites, 85
Egypt, slavery of Israelites in, 18–19, 23, 54–55, 151
Elam/Elamites, 147–48, 167
Elijah, 72, 114, 118
Eliphaz, 85
Elisha, 72
Elizer, 177
Elon the Hittite, 85
Enoch (city), 65–68, 81, 185
Enoch (line of Cain): genealogy of, 67–68, 184–85; name's meaning, 67–68
Enoch (line of Seth): ascension of, *89*, 93, 97–98, 99, 101, 102, 105, 106, 110, 113–20, 122–23, 130; genealogy of, 48–49, 52, 66, *89*, 93, 110, 113–19; name's meaning, 112, 113; patriarchs living contemporaneously with, *89*, 99, 102, 105, 107, 110, 116, 120, 122–23, 129–30; revelation of flood by, 116–17, 120–21; walk with God by, *89*, 93, 98, 113–18, 120, 122, 123, 185
Enosh: genealogy of, 52, *89*, 94, 99, 102–106, ; life span of, *89*, 94, 102; name's meaning, 102; patriarchs living contemporaneously with, *89*, 116; worship's evolution and, 103, 107, 185
Ephesians, 32; 1:7, 30; 1:9–10, 33; 2:8–9, 106; 5:3, 170
Esau: genealogy of, 40, 44, 84–85, 155, 165; militancy of, 165
Esther, Queen (of Persia), 85
Euphrates River: crossing of, 156–59, 164, 196; plague on, 159
Eve, 129, 183; creation of, 42; curse, by God, on, 59–60, 65, 210; fall of/sin by, 18, 31, 34–35, 42, 59, 64, 82, 95–96, 117, 210; name's meaning, 95
Exodus: 12:40–41, 54; 13:16, 20; 17:14, 71; 19:5, 194; 23:19, 60
exodus of Israelites, 16, 18–19, 24, 151; attacks

suffered during, 85; dating of, 53–54
Ezekiel 48:14, 60
Ezra 7, 51

fall of man, 61; arrogance associated with, 81; death's manifestation due to, 98, 115–16, 117–18, 189; Genesis structure and, 42, 44; seed of God and, 64; suffering's relation to, 124; as theme of redemptive history, 18–19, 30–31, 33–34, 37–38, 42, 44, 58, 61, 63, 81, 93, 94–96, 98, 115–16, 117–18, 124, 210
Feast of Tabernacles, 20
Feast of Weeks, 20
flood. See great flood
Freeman, Travis R., 51

Galatians 4:30, 204
Garden of Eden, 18, 68; banishment of man from, 19, 59, 65, 93, 210; testimony on, 95–97, 116, 122
Genesis, 9–10; 2:4, 43; 2:17, 98; 2:19, 97; 2:25, 96; 3:10, 96; 4:1, 59; 4:5–6, 60, 61; 4:9, 61; 4:16, 184; 4:16–17, 66; 4:19, 73; 4:23–24, 73; 4:26, 110–111; 5:1, 43, 45; 5:3, 99; 5:5, 98; 5:28, 124, 128; 5:29, 127, 128; 6:2, 130; 6:3, 135–41; 6:7, 71; 6:9, 43; 6:11, 131; 6:13, 133; 6:18, 132; 7:23, 71; 9:1, 150; 9:7, 150; 9:22, 150; 10:1, 43, 133; 10:8–9, 81; 10:25, 163; 11:1, 164; 11:8–9, 83; 11:10, 45, 131; 11:12, 155; 11:27, 44; 11:31, 173–74; 11:32, 174; 12:1, 193; 12:4–5, 203; 13:10–12, 204; 16:12, 84; 17:18, 204; 18:17–19, 182; 21:11, 204; 22:12, 206; 22:15–18, 207; 25:12, 44; 25:19, 44; 36:1, 44; 37:2, 44; Cainan's omission in, 52, 154–55; contents of, 11; "120 years" reference in, 135–41; structure of, 42–44
Genesis genealogy(ies): of Abraham, 38–40, 42–44, 48–53, 55, *92*, 132, 143–44, 155, 173, 176–79, 191, 202–08; accuracy of, 50–53; of Adam, 38–39, 42–43, 45–49, 51–52, 55, 59–60, 88, *89–91*, 93–101, 115–18, 183–84; from Adam to Noah, 88, 93–133; arrogance representations in, 68–70; beginnings of, variances in, 183–84; birth/death records in, 186–88; boundaries of faith represented in, 147, 150–52; Cainan's omission in, 52, 154–55; differences between Cain's and Seth's lines in, 182–92; of Esau, 40, 44, 84–85, 167, 155; flow of, 40–41; format of, 46–47; gaps/disconnections in, 51–53, 187, 191; Genesis' structure and, 42–43; gospel's spread in, 81, 151–53, 195–96, 209, 136, 140; greed representations in, 170–72; of heaven and earth, 43; humility representations in, 110–12; of Isaac, 43–44, 52, 55, 84–85, *92*, 145–46, 155, 167, 176, 178, 204–06; of Ishmael, 40, 44, 83–85, 167; of Jacob, 38, 43–44, 49, 52, 55, 85, *90–91*, 145–46, 155, 178; judgments by God represented in, 42, 44, 59, 65, 65–68, 81–84, 93, 98, 114–18, 120–22, 125–26, 128–34, 134, 150, 157–58, 160–62, 185, 189–90, 197, 198, 210, 136–137, 139–41; language confusion represented in, 81–82, 160–61, 164–65, 197; lifestyle representations in, 185–86; longevity records in, 47, 93–94, 111, 121–22, 157, 169, 188–92, 138–39; mankind's origin in, 42, 95–97; mankind's scattering in, 81–83, 160–61, 164–65; material selected for, 46; Messiah's first coming revealed in, 10, 30, 34–36, 48–49, 53, 88, 96, 106, 129, 207, 211–12; Messiah's Second Coming revealed in, 30, 35–37, 88, 118–20, 129, 191–92, 212, 216, 219; names' significance in, 47, 67–68; of Noah, 38, 39–40, 41, 42, 46–47, 49–52, 82, 88, *90–91*, 115, 121–24, 125–31, 134, 142–44, 138–40; opposing path representations in, 71–72; redemptive significance of, 11, 22–23, 36–37, 42–43; relationships between generations and, 46; separation from God themes in, 65, 76–83, 157, 160–61, 163–65, 170–72, 184, 186, 187; separation from sin themes, 142, 156–59, 165, 173–78, 182, 192–207; of Shem, 38, 40, 43, 46–49, 52, *90*, 127, 132–33, 136–38, 142–51, 156–57, 167, 177, 211; from Shem to Abraham, 142–79; sin's descendants in, 79–85; strength concepts in, 73, 78, 123–24, 166–68, 198–99; structure of, 39–40; study, method of, for, 46–49; of Terah, 44, 49, 52, *91–92*, 132, 146, 159, 169, 173–77, 200–02; timeline, calculation of, in, 49, 52, 53–55, 97, 101, 115, 117, 129–30, 209, 155; transfigurations represented in, 93, 97–98, 99, 101, 102, 105, 107, 110, 112–19, 122–23, 130; worship's evolution in lines of, 103–09, 185. See also Cain; patriarchs of Genesis; Seth; specific genealogies
Gethsemane, Garden of, 36, 200
Gibeon 25
God: "blotting out" by, 70–72; covenant of the bow by, 81, 134, 162, 210; fear of, 76, 133, 188–89, 206; friends of, 163–65, 198; honoring of parents

and, 150, 191; Israelites' betrayal of, 16, 62; language, confusion of, by, 81–82, 160–61, 164–65, 197; name of, 142–44; omnipotence of, 68–70; providence of, 32, 144; scattering of humans by, 80–83, 160–61, 164–65; seed of, 34, 61–65, 192; unity of man apart from, 65, 75–76, 81–82, 157, 160–61, 164–65, 185, 186, 197; walking with, 71–72, 93, 98, 113–18, 121, 122, 123, 139, 185, *89*; Word of, 12, 62–63, 81–82, 93, 116–18, 129, 136, 144, 152, 183, 184–87, 191–92, 194–96, 198–99, 203, 216–19. See also judgment(s), God's; Word of God
Golgotha, 217
Gomorrah, 198, 204
the great flood: ark's passengers during, 124–25, 132–33; covenant of the bow after, 80, 134, 162, 210; date of, *90*, 121; as God's judgment on man, 42, 44, 80, 116–17, 120–22, 125–26, 128–34, 136–37, 139–40, 142, 150, 161–62, 185; repentance period prior to, 122, 135–36, 139–41; revelation of, *92*, 116–17, 120–21, 130, 136–37, 185; sin's rebound after, 142, 209; warnings of, 122, 125–26, 128
greed, 170–72
groaning, 34, 102

Hagar, 83, 204–205
Ham: genealogy of, 40, 43, 52, 79, 83–85, 127, 130, 137–38, 143, 149–50, 157, 209; name's meaning, 143; Noah's judgment on, 150
Haman, 85
Hammedatha the Agagite, 85
Hannah, 82, 112
Haran (city), 173–74, 177–78, 200–01, 206
Haran (son of Terah), 132, 173
heaven, creation/genealogy of, 42–43
Hebrews 11:4, 60
Henry, Matthew, 118
Herod, 40
Hezekiah, King (of Judah), 70
The Holy Spirit: Christ's conception via, 35, 101, 106; groaning of, 34; Pentecost and, 153, 195
holy throw, 195. See also separation
honoring of parents, 150, 191
Hosea 12:5, 144
Hoshea, King (of Israel), 149

idolatry, 194; by Nahor, 170–72; by Terah, 173–75, 200–02, 210
Irad: genealogy of, 68–70; name's meaning, 68, 70
Isaac: genealogy of, 43–44, 52, 55, 83–85, *92*, 145–46, 155, 167, 176, 178, 204–06; patriarchs living contemporaneously with, *90–91*, 143, 146–47, 152, 156; sacrificial offering of, 112, 178, 205, 206
Isaiah, 82, 149, 192; 40:31, 168; 42:8, 144; 51:1–2, 23; 55:13, 144
Ishmael: Abraham's casting out of, 204–06; genealogy of, 40, 44, 82–85, 167; militancy of, 167; name's meaning, 83
Israel: attacks on, 148–49; birth of, 151–52, 191; kings of, 25, 38, 40, 51, 54, 69, 72, 108, 145, 149, 196. See also Canaan
Israelites, 17; betrayal of God by, 16, 62; exodus of, 16, 18–19, 24, 53–54, 85, 152; slavery of, 18–19, 23, 54–55, 152

Jabal, 73, 75, 185
Jabez, 195
Jacob, 99–100; genealogy of, 38, 43–44, 49, 52, 55, 85, *90–91*, 145–46, 155, 178; patriarchs living contemporaneously with, *90–91*, 143, 146, 152, 156
James 4:6, 81
Japheth: genealogy of, 40, 43, 52, 125, 130, 143, 150, 137–38; name's meaning, 143–44
Jared: genealogy of, 52, *89*, 93–94, 107, 110–13; life span of, *89*, 93–94, 110, 111, 189; name's meaning, 110; patriarchs living contemporaneously with, *89*, 116, 130
Jehoash, King (of Judah), 50
Jehoiakim, 50
Jehoshaphat, King (of Judah), 25
Jehovah, 59, 102–103. See also God
Jeremiah, 19; 31:31–34, 156
Jericho, 108
Jerusalem, 148–49, 195
Jesus Christ, 13, 21, 62; coming, first, of, 10, 30, 34–37, 48–49, 53, 88, 96, 106, 129, 207, 211–12, 216–19; coming, second, of, 30, 35–37, 88, 118–19, 129, 191–92, 212, 216, 219; conception/birth of, 35, 101, 106, 111; conspiracies against, 40; crucifixion of, 30, 34–37, 68, 96; genealogy of, 38–41, 45–46, 50, 52–53, 191, 207, 208; living water in relation to, 186, 216–19; obedience, to God, of, 110–12; redemptive significance of, 10, 30, 34–37, 48–49, 53, 88, 96, 106, 118–19, 129, 191–92, 207, 211–12, 216–19; as unexpected gift, 105–06
Job 34:21–22, 69
Joel, 217
John, 62; 7:37–38, 218; 8:44, 64; 15:14, 198; 15:14–15, 198; 21:25, 46
Jonah 4:5, 136, 141
Joram, 50
Joseph, 19, 99; genealogy of, 42, 43, 49, 101
Joshua, 16; 4:6–7, 21; 24:2, 173, 177; "Ask your fathers" command and, 24; "Remember the days of old" command and, 22
Josiah, 50
Jubal, 73, 75, 185

Jubilees 8:2–3, 155
Judah: genealogy of, 38, 40, 145; Kingdom of, 25, 50, 70, 148–49, 151, 195; name's meaning, 108–09
Judas, 63, 201
judgment(s), God's, 198; on Adam, 59–60, 65, 93, 190, 210; on Cain, 65–68, 210; on Eve, 59–60, 65, 210; by fire, 129, 132; by flood, 42, 44, 80, 116–17, 120–22, 125–26, 128–34, 142, 150, 161–62, 185, 190, 136–37, 139–41; by life span reduction, 93, 134, 138–39, 156, 161–62, 169–70, 189–90; for original sin/fall of man, 98, 115–16, 117–18, 124, 210; revelations of, 92, 116–17, 120–22, 130, 136–37, 185; for Tower of Babel, 44, 81–83, 157–58, 160–61, 164–65, 189–90, 197, 210

Kenan: genealogy of, 52, *89*, 93–94, 102, 105–06, 108; life span of, *89*, 93–94, 105; name's meaning, 105, 106; patriarchs living contemporaneously with, *89*, 116; worship's evolution and, 107–09
Keturah, 40
Kim, Eui-Won, 94
Kim, Sung Il, 161
Kings: 6:1, 52; 22:7, 25
Kulling, Samuel R., 50

Lamech (line of Cain): deification of self by, 76; genealogy of, 72–78, 83, 85, 93, 123–24, 185, 209; holy matrimony defilement by, 73–74; misrepresentation of God by, 74; murder/contempt by, 72, 73–74, 76, 185, 209; name's meaning, 72, 124–26,
Lamech (line of Seth): genealogy of, 49, 52, *90*, 94, 95, 117, 120, 123–28, 146, 185–86; life span of, *90*, 94, 123, 125; name's meaning, 123–24; patriarchs living contemporaneously with, *90*, 92, 116, 125, 130, 146
Lange, John P., 72
language, confusion of, 81–83, 160–61, 164–65, 197
Lazarus, 208
Leviticus 19:32, 25
living waters, 186, 216–19
longevity: fear of God in relation to, 188–89; honoring of parents in relation to, 191; of patriarchs, 24, 47, 93–94, 111, 121–22, 157, 168, 188–94; purposes of, 191–94; sin's reduction of, 93, 137–38, 142, 157, 160–62, 169–70, 189–90; variances in records of, 188–94
Lot, 148, 206; Abraham's journey with, 173, 203–04
Lud, 147
Luke: 1:28–30, 106; 3:34, 169, 173, 176; 3:35, 153, 156, 160, 163, 166; 3:36, 123, 127, 143, 147, 154; 3:37, 105, 107, 110, 120; 3:38, 95, 99, 102; 12:15, 170; 12:20, 170; 14:26, 204; 14:33, 204; Cainan in genealogies of, 52, 154–55

Mahalalel: genealogy of, 52, *89*, 93–94, 105, 107–9, 110; life span of, *89*, 93–94, 107; name's meaning, 107–8; patriarchs living contemporaneously with, *89*, 116; worship's evolution and, 107–09, 185
Mark, 153
Mary, 101, 106
Matthew, 50–51; 1:1, 45–46; 3:12, 159; 7:16, 64; 13:25–28, 62; 20:28, 30; 24:37, 126
Mehujael: genealogy of, 70–72; name's meaning, 71
Methuselah: genealogy of, 48, 52, *90*, 93–94, 97–98, 113, 120–22, 123–24, 146; great flood revealed through, 116–17, 120–22, 185; life span of, *90*, 93–94, 111, 120, 121–22, 189; name's meaning, 120; patriarchs living contemporaneously with, *90*, 116, 122, 130, 146
Methushael, 72–73
Michal, *69*
Mizraim, 83
Moab, Plains of, 16
Moriah, Mount, 54, 112
Morris, Henry M., 51, 79
Moses, 72–73, 156, 218; "Ask your father" command by, 16–17, 24–27; "Consider the years of all generations" command by, 11, 16–17, 23–24, 49, 219; longevity and, 190; "Remember the days of old" command by, 11, 16–17, 18–21, 49, 219

Naamah, 73, 75–76
Nahor: genealogy of, 38, 52, *91*, 132, 146, 159, 166, 169–73, 177, 199–200; greed and, 170–72, 199–200; life span of, *91*, 169–70; name's meaning, 169, 171, 199; patriarchs living contemporaneously with, *91–92*, 146, 162, 169, 176
name(s): dual translations of, 71–72; God's, 144–46; meanings, in Cain's line, of, 59, 66–68, 70, 72–73, 75–76, 79, 123–24; meanings, in Seth's line, of, 84, 95, 99–101, 102, 105, 106, 107–110, 112, 113, 120, 127, 143–44, 147, 152–53, 156, 160, 163, 166, 169, 171, 173–74, 176, 177, 194–200; significance to genealogies of, 47
Nebuchadnezzar, King (of Babylon), 70
Nimrod: Assyria invasion by, 149; genealogy of, 78–83, 84–85; name's meaning, 79; Tower of Babel construction by, 79, 80–83, 85, 149, 163
Noah, 18; ark built by, *90*, 122, 125–26, 130–31, 132–34, 135–37, 186; genealogy of, 38, 39–40, 42, 43, 48–49, 50–52, 84, *90*, 94, 117, 123–26,

127–33, 135–37, 143–45; great flood and, 44, *90*, 122, 125–26, 128–30, 132–33, 186, 209–210; Ham's judgment by, 150; life span of, 90, 94, 129, 162, 189; name's meaning, 127; patriarchs living contemporaneously with, 48, *90–92*, 102, 105, 107, 110, 116, 120, 122–23, 125, 129–30, 132, 143, 146–47, 152, 156, 160, 162–63, 166, 169, 173, 176, 179; redemptive significance of, 44, *92*, 124–25, 127–29, 131, 131–34, 142, 176, 179, 186; Shem's blessing by, 150; siblings of, 125–26; spread of gospel and, 81, 209, 136, 140
Nod, 65–67, 184

Oholibamah, 85
"120 years" (of Genesis 6:3): ark construction theories related to, 135–37, 141; longevity theories related to, 138–39; repentance period theories related to, 139–41

Park, Yune-Sun, 88, 127–28
Passover, Day of, 20
patriarchs of Genesis: Abraham, 18, 23, 26, 38–40, 42–44, 48–53, 55, 62, *90–92*, 112, 129, 132, 142, 143, 145–47, 153, 155, 156, 159, 162, 165, 173–79, 182, 192–93, 197, 200–12; Adam, 10, 18, 31, 34–35, 37–39, 42–49, 51–52, 55, 58–61, 64, 65, 81, 88, *89–92*, 93–112, 102, 105, 107, 110, 111, 113, 115–18, 120, 122–23, 129–30, 158, 183–84, 189–90, 210; Arpachshad, 52, *90*, *92*, 132, 143, 146–53, 154–55, 156, 162, 176, 178, 194–95; "Ask your father" command in relation to, 24–25; Eber, 48–49, 52, *91–92*, 146, 153, 154, 156–63, 165, 175, 176, 197; Enoch, 48–49, 52, *66*, *89*, 93, 97–99, 101–102, 105, 107, 110, 112–23, 129–30, 185; Enosh, 52, *89*, 94, 99, 102–107, 116, 185; Jared, 52, *89*, 93–94, 107, 110–112, 116, 130, 189; Kenan, 52, *89*, 93–94, 102, 105–8, 116; Lamech, 49, 52, *89–90*, 92, 94, 95, 116–17, 120, 123–28, 130, 146, 185–86; longevity of, 24, 47, 93–94, 111, 121–22, 157, 169, 188–94; Mahalalel, 52, *89*, 93–94, 105, 107–10, 116, 185; Methuselah, 48, 52, *89–90*, 93–94, 97–98, 111, 112, 116–17, 120–24, 130, 146, 185, 189; Nahor, 40, 52, *91–92*, 132, 146, 159, 162, 166, 169–73, 176, 177, 199–200; names' significance to, 47; Noah, 18, 38, 39–40, 42–44, 48–49, 51–52, 81, 83, *90–92*, 94, 102, 105, 107, 110, 116–17, 120, 122–47, 135–41, 150, 152, 156, 160, 162–63, 166, 169, 172, 176, 179, 186, 189, 209–210; Peleg, 49, 52, *91–92*, 142, 146, 156–63, 165, 169, 176, 197; procreation ages of, 52, 132–33; redemptive significance of, 11–12, 24–25, 38–41, 42, 46; relationships between, significance of, 48; Reu, 52, *91–92*, 146, 159–65, 169, 176, 198; separation work by, 142, 156–59, 165, 173–78, 182, 192–207; Serug, 52, *91–92*, 146, 159, 161–63, 166–69, 172, 176, 198–99; Seth, 38–40, 42–53, 55, 59–60, *66*, 78–85, 88–179, 194–208, 211; Shelah, 52, *90–92*, 145–46, 152–56, 162, 176, 195–96; Shem, 38, 40, 43, 46–49, 52, *90*, *92*, 122, 127, 130, 132–33, 136–38, 143–51, 156–57, 162, 167, 175, 176, 177, 209, 211; structure of writings on, 42–43, 46; Terah, 44, 49, 52, *91–92*, 132, 146, 159, 162, 169, 173–77, 200–203, 206; timeline of generations of, 42, 52–55, *89–92*. See also specific patriarchs
Paul, 34, 36, 65, 72; human weakness and, 104; Messiah's coming and, 125; separation from sin and, 196, 199–200; unity with God and, 82
Peleg: genealogy of, 47, 52, *91*, 146, 156–63, 165, 197; life span in relation to, *91*, 134, 157, 160, 161–62, 169; name's meaning, 160, 197; patriarchs living contemporaneously with, *91–92*, 146, 160, 162, 176; scattering of man during time of, 160–61
Pentecost, 153, 195
Perez, 38, 40
Peter, 13, 63–64, *69*
1 Peter: 1:13, 132; 1:18–19, 30
2 Peter 2:5, 128
polygamy, 73
Proverbs: 3:1–2, 93; 3:9, 60; 6:12–15, 169; 10:27, 189; 15:3, 69; 15:8, 60; 16:31, 25; 28:16, 170; 29:1, 169
Psalm: 1:6, 187; 10:4, 69; 14:1, *69*; 18:29, 196; 31, *69*; 55:23, 157; 94, 190; 119:133, 168; 135:13, 144
Put, 84

Rebekah, 177, 155
redemption: Abraham's significance in history of, 44, 142, 174–79, 182, 191–92, 197, 208–12; ascension foreshadowing, 118; "Ask your father" command's relevance to, 16–17, 24–27; via calling on the name of the Lord, 102–104; via Christ's first coming, 10, 30, 34–37, 48–49, 53, 88, 96, 106, 129, 207, 211–12, 216–19; via Christ's Second Coming, 30, 35–37, 88, 118–19, 129, 191–92, 212, 216, 219; "Consider the years of all generations" com-

mand's relevance to, 11, 16–17, 22–23, 48, 219; creation as theme of, 30, 38; Eber's significance in history of, 156–59, 175; efficacy of, 36; fall of man in relation to, 18–19, 30–31, 34–35, 37–38, 42, 44, 58, 60, 64, 81, 93, 95–96, 98, 115–16, 117–18, 124, 210; focus of, 33–35; friendship with God and, 163–65, 198; fulfillment of, 34–37, 216–19; God's praise in relation to, 107–09; God's providence in relation to, 32, 144; God's seeds and, 61–65, 100–01; humility's relation to, 110–12; meaning of, 30; Noah's significance in history of, 44, 124–25, 127–29, 129, 133–34, 142, 176, 179, 186, 135; patriarchs' significance to, 11–12, 24–25, 38–41, 42, 46; predestination of, 33, 35–36; prophecies on, 44–45; "Remember the days of old" command's relation to, 11, 16–17, 18–21, 49, 219; scope of, 33–35; separation from God's impact on, 65, 75–83, 157, 160–61, 163–65, 170–72, 184, 186, 197; separation from sin as path to, 142, 156–59, 165, 173–78, 182, 192–207; Shem's significance in history of, 142–46, 175, 211; spiritual boundary as foundation of, 147, 150; walking with God in relation to, 72–73, 93, 89, 98, 113–17, 121, 122, 123, 131, 185; weakness acknowledgment and, 102–4; worship's evolution and, 103–9, 185. See also administration, redemptive; Genesis genealogy(ies)

"Remember the days of old" command (Moses), 16–17; Christ's Second Coming and, 219; memorial days/objects established for, 20–21; salvation's relevance to, 11, 18–19, 49

Rephidim, 85

Reu: friends of God and, 163–65, 198; genealogy of, 52, *91*, 146, 159, 160, 163–66, 198; life span of, *91*, 161, 163, 169; name's meaning, 163; patriarchs living contemporaneously with, *91–92*, 146, 162–63, 176,

Revelation: 4:10–11, 205; 7:17, 219; 9:13–14, 159; 16:12, 159

Romans: 1:21–32, 171; 7:20, 65; 10:13, 103; 12:1, 60

Sabbath, 20, 129

saints, groaning of, 34

salvation, 30–31, 144; Abraham's relation to, 182, 208–12; "Ask your father" command and, 16–17, 24–27; calling on name of Lord for, 102–4; "Consider the years of all generations" and, 11, 16–17, 22–23, 49, 219; "Remember the days of old" command and, 11, 16–17, 18–21, 49, 219. See also redemption

Samaria, 149, 153, 195

Samuel, 72, 83, 112

1 Samuel 2:6–10, 83

Sarah (Sarai), 23, 83; Canaan journey by, 173, 203; renaming of, 211

Satan, 118, 200; Cain's influence by, 61–65; in Garden of Eden, 62, 64, 81, 95; Second Coming of Messiah's impact on, 212, 219; unity of man associated with, 75–76, 81–83, 164–65, 197

Saul, 108

scattering of humans, 80–83, 162–63, 166–67

seed: of Abraham, 207, 212; "another," 100–01, 183; of the devil, 62–65; of God, 35, 61–65, 192; woman's, 12, 34–35, 38, 46, 48, 59, 95–96, 101, 110, 115, 210, 212

Sennacherib, King (of Assyria), 148–49

separation: Abraham's work of, 142, 156, 159, 165, 173–75, 176–78, 193, 202–07; from God, 65, 74–83, 157, 160–61, 163–65, 170–72, 184, 186, 197; patriarchs' work of, 142, 156–59, 165, 173–78, 182, 192–207; purpose of, 193; rewards of, 207; from sin, 142, 156–60, 165, 173–78, 182, 192–207

Serug: genealogy of, 52, *91*, 146, 159, 163, 166–69, 172, 198–99; life span of, *91*, 161, 169; name's meaning, 166, 198; patriarchs living contemporaneously with, *91–92*, 146, 162, 166, 176; strength concepts and, 166–68, 198–99

Seth: Abraham's genealogy in line of, 38–40, 42–44, 48–53, 55, *89*, 132, 145–46, 155, 173, 176–79, 191, 202–08; Adam's genealogy in relation to, 38–39, 42–43, 45–49, 51–52, 55, 59–60, 88, *89–91*, 93–101, 115–18, 183–84; Arpachshad genealogy from line of, 52, *90*, 132, 143, 146, 147–53, 154–55, 156, 194–95; birth/death records in line of, 186–88; Cain's influence on line of, 78–85, 130–31, 138; Cain's line comparisons to line of, 182–92; Eber's genealogy in line of, 48–49, 52, *91*, 146, 152, 154, 156–62; Enoch's genealogy in line of, 48–49, 52, *66*, *89*, 93, 110, 113–19; Enosh's genealogy in line of, 52, *89*, 94, 99, 102–6; genealogy of, 40, 46–47, 49, 51–52, 88, *89*, 93–179, 182–92; image and likeness of, 100, 188; Jared's genealogy in line of, 52, *89*, 93–94, 106, 110–12; Kenan's genealogy in line of, 52, *89*, 93–94, 102, 105–7, 108; Lamech's genealogy in line of, 49, 52, *89–90*, 94, 95, 117,

120, 123–28, 146, 185–86; life span of, *89*, 94, *99*, 101; lifestyle representations in line of, 185–86; longevity in line of, 93–94, 111, 121–22, 157, 169, 188–*92*; Mahalalel's genealogy in line of, 52, *89*, 93–94, 105, 107–*09*, 110; Methuselah's genealogy in line of, 48, 52, *89–90*, 93–94, 97–98, 113, 120–22, 123–24, 146; Nahor's genealogy in line of, 40, 52, *91*, 132, 146, 159, 166, 169–73, 177, 199–200; name meanings and, 99–101; Noah's genealogy in line of, 38, 39–40, 42, 43, 48–49, 51–52, 83, *90–92*, 94, 117, 123–26, 127–33, 136–38, 143–46; patriarchs living contemporaneously with, *89*, *99*, 116, 129–30; Peleg's genealogy in line of, 49, 52, *91*, 146, 156–63, 165, 197; Reu's genealogy in line of, 52, *91*, 146, 159, 160, 163–66, 198; Serug's genealogy in line of, 52, *91*, 146, 159, 163, 166–*69*, 172, 198–*99*; Shelah's genealogy in line of, 52, *90–91*, 146, 147, 152–53, 154–55, 156, 195–96; Shem's genealogy in line of, 38, 40, 43, 46–49, 52, *90*, 127, 132–33, 136–38, 143–51, 156–57, 165, 177, 211; Terah's genealogy in line of, 44, 49, 52, *91–92*, 132, 146, 159, 169, 173–77, 200–02. See also specific genealogies
Shalmaneser, King (of Assyria), 149
Shelah: genealogy of, 52, *90–91*, 146, 147, 152–57, 158, 195–96; genealogy of Cainan in relation to, 52, 154–55; gospel's spread through, 152–53, 195–96; life span of, *91*, 152; name's meaning, 152–53, 195; patriarchs living contemporaneously with, *91–92*, 146, 152, 162, 176
Shem, 209; genealogy of, 38, 40, 43, 46–49, 52, *90*, 127, 132–33, 136–39, 143–51, 156–57, 165, 177, 211; life span of, *90*, 143, 146; name of God and, 144–46; name's meaning, 143–44; Noah's blessing on, 141; patriarchs living contemporaneously with, *91–92*, 122, 130, 143, 146, 162, 176; redemptive significance of, 142–46, 175, 211
Shiloh, 145. See also Jesus Christ
Shittim, valley of, 217
sin: Cain's line, influence of, on, 58–85, 130–31, 209; faith's preservation through, 210; longevity's relation to, 88, 138–40, 142, 157, 161–62, 169–70, 189–90; original, 18–19, 30–31, 34–35, 37–38, 42, 44, 58, 61, 64, 81, 93, 95–96, 98, 115–16, 117–18, 124; separation from, 142, 156–60, 165, 173–78, 182, 192–207; spread of, 58–85, 130–31, 142, 164–65, 174–75, 176, 209
Sodom, 198, 204
Solomon, King (of Israel), 54, 97, 108, 145
Suh, Chul Won, 111

Ten Commandments, 191
Terah: genealogy of, 44, 49, 52, *91–92*, 132, 146, 159, 169, 173–77, 200–02; life span of, 169, 136; name's meaning, 173–74, 177, 200; patriarchs living contemporaneously with, *92*, 146, 162, 173, 176; separation struggles by, 173–75, 177, 200–03, 206
Timna, 85
Timothy, 73
1 Timothy 2:6, 30
Tower of Babel, 18, 42, 65, 142; judgment, by God, on, 44, 82–84, 157–59, 160–61, 164–65, 189–90, 197, 210; migration post-, 163; Nimrod's association with, 79, 80–83, 85, 149, 162; purpose of, 80–83, 185, 197; sin's spread after, 164–65, 174–75, 176, 209; structure of, 80
tree of knowledge, 81, 98, 117
Tubal-cain, 74, 75–76, 185

unity of man: apart from God, 65, 75–76, 81–83, 157, 160–61, 164–65, 184, 186, 197; redemptive consecration and, 142, 156–60, 165, 173–78, 182, 192–207; Tower of Babel and, 65, 81–83, 157, 160–61, 164–65, 197; Word of God and, 81–83, 182, 184, 186. See also separation
Ur of the Chaldeans, 210; Abraham's departure from, 142, 152, 159, 162, 173–74, 176–78, 200, 202–204, 206; name's meaning, 176–78
Uzziah, 50

walking with God, 72–73; by Enoch, *89*, 93, 98, 113–17, 121, 122, 123, 185; by Noah, 128
Walton, John H., 141
Word of God, 12, 93, 144, 136; Enoch's ascension and, 116; "good seeds" and, 64; great flood and, 129, 186; longevity's relation to, 191–92; Pentecost and, 152; redemption's fulfillment through, 216–19; separation work related to, 194–96, 198–99, 203; Seth's descendants and, 184–87, 191–92; unity of man in relation to, 81–83, 182, 184, 186. See also God

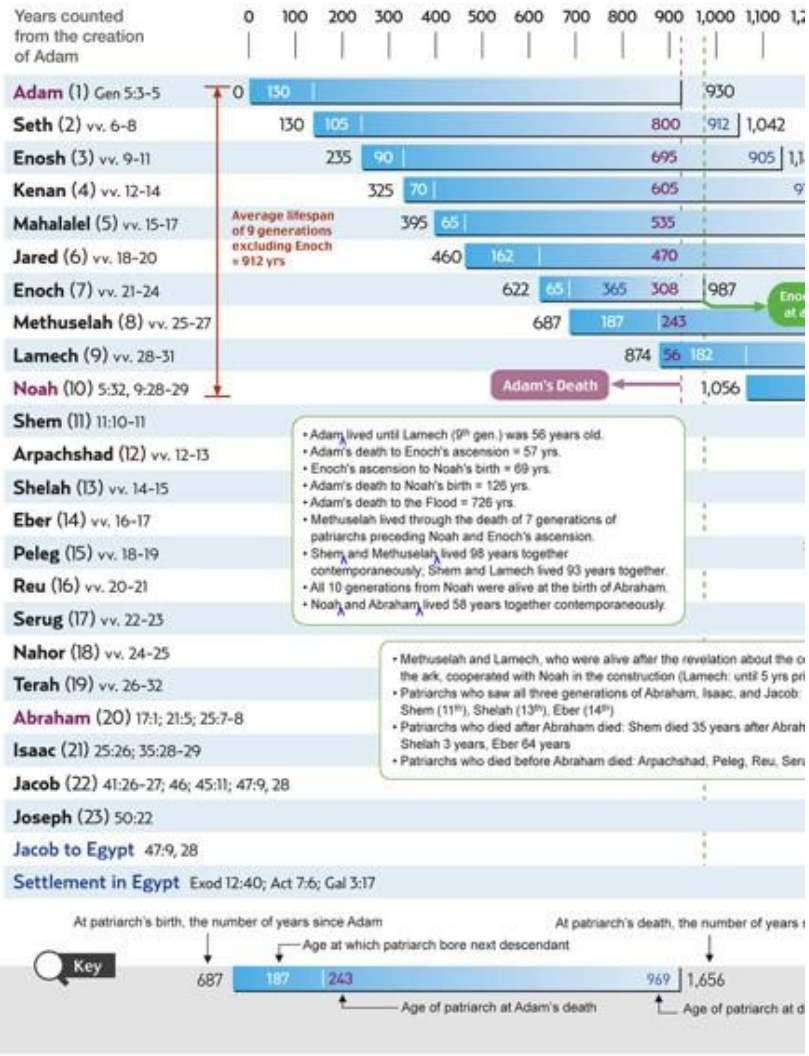
Yahweh, 59. See also God

Zechariah, 217; 4:6, 168
Zered (brook), 16
Zerubbabel, 168
Zillah, 74–76

Excursus 1

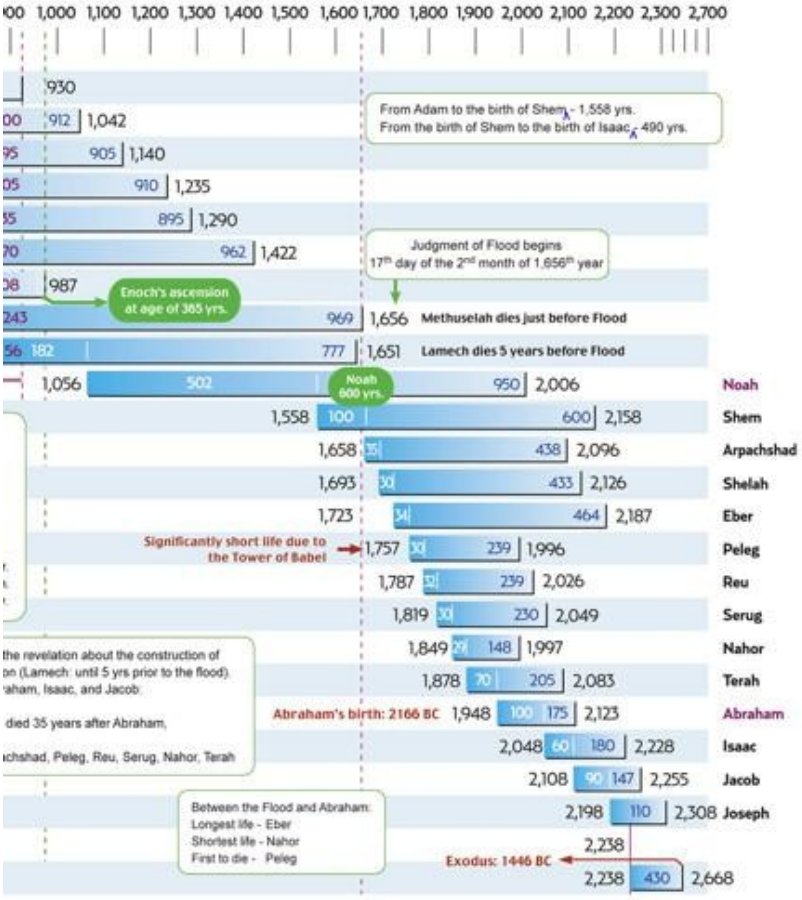
Chronology of the Patriarchs

(✙ Organized and illustrated for the first time in history)



"Now it came about in the four hundred and eightieth year after the sons of Israel came out of the land of Egypt, in the fourth year of Solomon's reign over Israel, in the month of Ziv which is the second month, that he began to build the house of the LORD" (1 Kings 6:1).

* Solomon became king in 970 BC and began building the temple in 966 BC.
* The year of the exodus = 1446 BC (966 + 480)



* The years are based only on biblical accounts and estimations may vary slightly.



Rev. Abraham Park

Born on May 17, 1928 in Sariwon, Hwang-he Province, Korea

Graduated from the Presbyterian General Assembly Theological University (B.A. in Biblical Studies)

Graduated from Kookmin University (B.A. in Business and Economy)

Graduated from the Presbyterian General Assembly Theological Seminary (M.Div.)

Honorary doctor of ministry (D.Min.) from Lael College and Graduate School

Honorary doctor of theology (Th.D.) from Faith Theological Seminary

Former moderator of the Hap-dong Conservative General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church in Korea

"One simply cannot overstate the importance of Genesis as the foundational paradigm for all Christian thinking. Dr. Abraham Park is to be congratulated for his important and worthy contribution to our understanding of this foundational book.... He carefully considers the ten genealogies of Genesis.... [and] employs these genealogies to reveal the core of God's work of redemption in history which find their ultimate expression in the work of Jesus Christ.... Dr. Park's book is a journey worth taking. I heartily recommend this insightful work.... Read it, study it, pray over it, and then put its wisdom to work in your life and ministry."

—Dr. Frank A. James III, Ph.D., D.Phil.
President, Reformed Theological Seminary, Orlando

"This book explains the reason for his great ministry and the large church that he pastors.... a careful study of the Scriptures... is penned by someone who possesses a profound, in-depth understanding of the Bible.... It is truly a work that deals with more than just the origin of creation, or Genesis.... Rev. Park discovers the great foundation of historical salvation and redemption from the genealogies of the patriarchs.... This perspective allows his readers to view the stories of the patriarchs as an archetype, not just in light of the stories of their lives, but in their connection to the current generation in our history. Turning the Bible into a book that is 'my story' is the outstanding achievement of this book."

—Dr. Kyung-Bae Min, Th.D.
Honorary Professor, Yonsei University, Seoul

"Pours out the spiritual mysteries of the Bible.... Rev. Park may actually be the wizard of language whom the Lord has sent to us during these turbid times where the Word of God has become scarce.... He addresses highly debated issues that even theologians cannot easily address...a marvelous and celebrated achievement.... I joyfully recommend *The Genesis Genealogies* to all the churches of the world, for it not only satisfies the spiritual aspirations of thirsting Christians, but also it is an absolute necessity for those who desire a more mature life of faith."

—Dr. Andrew J. Tesia, Ph.D.
President, Research Institute of Reformed Theology, Los Angeles

PERIPLUS EDITIONS
Singapore • Hong Kong • Indonesia

www.periplus.com
Printed in Singapore

ISBN 978-1-4629-0206-4
52495
9 781462 902064

Table of Contents

Cover
Chapter 1
Chapter 2
Chapter 3
Chapter 4
Chapter 5
Chapter 6
Chapter 7
Chapter 8
Chapter 9
Chapter 10
Chapter 11
Chapter 12
Chapter 13
Chapter 14
Backcover

The Genesis Genealogies

God's Administration in the History of Redemption

Rev. Abraham Park, D.Min., D.D.

"Remember the days of old, Consider the years of all generations.
Ask your father, and he will inform you, Your elders, and they will tell you."
Deuteronomy 32:7

God's Administration in the History of Redemption, **Book 1**